

PRESENTATION COPY.
With the Publishers' Compliments.
RELFE BROTHERS,
6, CHARTERHOUSE BUILDINGS, ALDERSGATE, E.C.

GRAMMAR

OF

COLLOQUIAL FRENCH.

BY

J. F. P. MASSÉ.



3 1761 07472203 4

A GRAMMAR OF
Colloquial French,

WITH NUMEROUS
EXERCISES PROGRESSIVELY ARRANGED

AND
PARADIGMS,

BY

J. F. P. MASSÉ,

ONE OF THE EXAMINERS IN MODERN LANGUAGES TO THE OXFORD AND CAMBRIDGE SCHOOLS
EXAMINATION BOARD, THE BOARD OF INTERMEDIATE EDUCATION FOR IRELAND,
THE CIVIL SERVICE COMMISSION, THE COLLEGE OF PRECEPTORS, ETC.

C'est ainsi que les choses se passent dans notre pays.
On y préfère la pleine lumière à la pénombre, les
couleurs nettes et tranchées aux nuances douteuses.
On exige que les mots y aient la valeur des chiffres,
et représentent pour tout le monde le même sens.

D. NISARD.

London :
RELFE BROTHERS, 6, CHARTERHOUSE BUILDINGS.

[All rights reserved.]

3564
8/2/1886



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
University of Toronto

PREFACE.

WHEN it is borne in mind, that, owing to the multiplicity of subjects taught in our Public Schools, but little time is available, wherein to practise *French Conversation*, it may be asked, if the irksome and often futile task of teaching Composition, should not be made subordinate to the more useful and pleasing study of *Colloquial French*.

The mere translation of the works of French authors, will never produce a pure and grammatical style of composition, and can hardly, in after years, be productive of much good, unless persevering attempts are made, to converse on the passages read, or to compose, in class, short sentences, calculated to facilitate Conversation, however elementary or common-place.

By leaping, at one gigantic stride, from the translation of Exercises on the Rules of Grammar, accompanied by numerous notes and references, to the rendering into French of extracts, selected, at random, from the works of Old and Modern English writers, little permanent benefit can accrue to the learner, and no satisfactory result can be expected by the tutor. Experience has proved the fallacy of this method, and to many, will it appear superfluous, here to repeat, that, unless an intimate acquaintance with the *Structure of Colloquial Sentences* has been previously gained, *Composition* in a modern tongue becomes an impossibility. When once a perfect command over the grammatical construction of the sentence has been acquired, and the pupil is able to express himself in a clear and intelligent manner, a knowledge of Idiomatic expressions, can assuredly be attained, in a comparatively short time, by constant application and carefully-observant imitation.

It is with the object of achieving this end, that this volume on COLLOQUIAL FRENCH is written. So many good Grammars are already in circulation, that, with the exception of the 238 Illustrations on the Subjunctive Mood [R. 66-303], only 70 Rules for reference, have found room in this work, which is to be viewed more in the light of a Collection of Colloquial Exercises, than a Grammar. But it contains some novel features, which I have endeavoured to render as useful as attractive; they consist of:

- I. A PARADIGM [No. 1] shewing the *Place of the Principal Words in the Sentence*, both in the Principal and in the Subordinate Clause.
- II. A PARADIGM [No. 2] illustrating the *Difference between the Moods and Ordinary and Idiomatic Tenses of the English Verb and those of the French Verb [Active Voice]*.
- III. A PARADIGM [No. 3] setting forth the *difference between the Moods and Ordinary and Idiomatic Tenses of the English and of the French Verb [Passive Voice]*.

- IV. A PARADIGM [No. 4] on the *Use of the Subjunctive Mood*, shewing the connection between all the Primary and Secondary Tenses of the English Verb, and the Simple and Compound Tenses of the Subjunctive Mood in French, an attempt which has not, until now, been made.
- V. A PARADIGM [No. 5] illustrative of the *Sequence of Tenses*, more complete and more explanatory, than those hitherto published.
- VI. A PARADIGM [No. 6] on the *Agreement of the Participle Past*, shewing, at a glance, and in a tabulated form, the Rules relating thereto, together with their Exceptions.

Many years ago, a small Table, shewing the place occupied by some of the Pronouns in the sentence, was published and inserted in various Grammars; but, whereas it consisted of *eleven* columns only, and omitted to draw a distinction between the Accusative case [which alone exercises any influence over the Participle past] and the Dative case, the place assigned to the second Negative and Adverbs, was unavoidably erroneous and incomplete in the extreme; neither was any mention made of the Infinitive mood, of the Participle past, nor of those pronouns which are placed after the Verb. According to this table, no distinction would appear to exist between *Je n'y suis TOUJOURS PAS resté*, and *Je n'y suis PAS TOUJOURS resté*. And its arrangement, has, for nearly half a century, given a tacit sanction to the writing of sentences such as: *Nous n'avons personne encore vu. Elle n'a nulle part encore été. Je n'en ai aucun cependant reçu. Vous n'êtes pas donc parties.*

In spite of these remarks, I am indebted for the groundwork of Paradigm [No. 1] to this primitive Table, which I have extended from its original number of *eleven* to *twenty-one* columns, and in which the Agreement of the Participle past with the Accusative case, is, now, for the first time, made prominently apparent.

The first appearance of two Comparative Tables on the *Relation existing between the Moods and Tenses of the English and those of the French Verb*, in the Active voice [Paradigm No. 2], and in the Passive voice [Paradigm No. 3], will, it is trusted, not be deemed out of place in a work of this kind.

Paradigm [No. 4] on the *Use of the Subjunctive Mood*, shews; that each of the 23 tenses of which the English verb is composed, can find its equivalent, in one of the five tenses of the French Subjunctive Mood.

Paradigm [No. 5] illustrates the *Sequence of Tenses*, and is partly based on the *Correspondance des Temps du Subjonctif avec ceux de l'Indicatif*, drawn up by the great Grammarians of France; but, inasmuch as it considerably exceeds, if it does not almost double, the labour of these esteemed authorities, it will now facilitate the labour of students, in their attempts to translate sentences such as: *Let us hope that he will succeed; Without caring whether you should have gone away; Being willing for them to return, &c.*

Considering the conventional silence observed by most Grammarians on this subject, these *two Paradigms*, and the many examples which accompany them, were deemed to be indispensable in a work on *Colloquial French*. The Subjunctive Mood is surrounded by exceptional difficulties, and special illustrations of its manifold intricacies were required, to enable pupils to become familiar with its use in French.

The subjoined statistics, shew the extent of the use, which some of the French writers have made of this mood :

Author.	Work.	Period.	Number of Volumes.	Lines or Pages.	Verbs in the Subjunctive Mood.
MOLIÈRE.	<i>L'Avare.</i>	XVII. C.		80 p.	168
	<i>Le Tartuffe.</i>	id.		1964 l.	190
VOLTAIRE	<i>La Henriade.</i>	XVIII. C.	1 vol.	4330 l.	96
CHATEAUBRIAND.	<i>Les Martyrs.</i>	XIX. C.	1 vol.	467 p.	247
GUIZOT.	<i>Civilisation en Europe.</i>	id.	1 vol.	426 p.	459
GEORGE SAND.	<i>Le Piccinino.</i>	id.	2 vols.	548 p.	741
	<i>La Mare au diable.</i>	id.	1 vol.	205 p.	202
E. SOUVESTRE.	<i>Un Philosophe sous les toits.</i>	id.	1 vol.	257 p.	109
BONNECHOSE.	<i>Lazare Hoche.</i>	id.	1 vol.	107 p.	87
VICTOR HUGO.	<i>Quatre-vingt-treize.</i>	id.	2 vols.	769 p.	208

Some concession, if not approval, on the part of Critics and Students, is asked, for the insertion of Paradigm [No. 6] on the *Agreement of the Participle Past*, the more so, as it is constructed on a novel plan, and places in juxtaposition those instances, in which the participle varies, with those in which it remains invariable.

If Statistics on the Subjunctive Mood are appreciated, additional interest will, probably, be evinced in those on the use of the Participle past.

The book I selected for this purpose, is Emile Souvestre's *Un philosophe sous les toits*, than which no more admirable or instructive work exists. [Edition Calmann Lévy, Paris.] Its 109 pages contain no fewer than 1844 illustrations of the use of the Participle past. And in order to shew, which of the 40 rules set forth in Paradigm No. 6, are most commonly used, a number referring to those rules, is appended to each of the following columns :

Without an Auxiliary, or used as a Qualificative.	CONJUGATED WITH ÊTRE.			CON-	
	Passive Verbs.	Reflexive Verbs.		Preceded by an Accusative Case.	Not preceded by an Accusative Case.
		Preceded by an Accusative Case.	Not preceded by an Accusative Case.		
VARIABLE.	VARIABLE.	VARIABLE.	INVARIABLE.	VARIABLE.	INVARIABLE.
(I.)	(4.)	(6.)	(7.)	(13.)	(12.) (14.)
666	269	120	9	148	596

An insight into the use of the various Simple and Compound Tenses, contained in the same delightful work, is afforded from an additional Analysis, which also shews the *Government of Verbs*, the number of *Substantives in the*

INDICATIVE MOOD.								CONDITIONAL MOOD.			SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.			
Present.	<i>Past Indefinite.</i>	Imperfect.	<i>Pluperfect.</i>	Past Definite.	<i>Past Anterior.</i>	Future.	<i>Future Anterior.</i>	Present.	<i>Past.</i>		Present or Future.	<i>Preterite.</i>	Imperfect.	<i>Pluperfect.</i>
									<div>i. ii.</div> <div>Form Form</div>					
1980	876	891	237	369	10	86	13	78	22	20	64	8	25	12

* These 304 Participles Present consist of 229 used as Verbs, and as such *invariable*;

† This number does not include 65 Participles Past

‡ From this number of *Inversions*,

JUGATED WITH AVOIR.					
Preceded by an Adverb of quantity.	Followed by an Infinitive, with or without Preposition.		Preceded by the Preposition <i>en</i> .	The Participle <i>fait</i> followed by an Infinitive.	
VARIABLE.	VARIABLE.	INVARIABLE.	VARIABLE.	INVARIABLE.	INVARIABLE.
(18.)	(22.) (24.)	(23.) (25.)	(32.)	(33.)	(27.)
I	9	7	I	9	9

Masculine or in the Feminine Gender, and the frequent occurrence of the Inversion of the Subject.

IMPERATIVE.	INFINITIVE MOOD.						PREPOSITION (IF ANY) GOVERNED BY VERBS, FOLLOWED BY AN INFINITIVE.			SUBSTANTIVES.		Inversion of the Subject.
Present or Future.	Present.	Past.	PARTICIPLES.			None	à	de	Masculine.	Feminine.		
			Present.	Compound.	Past.							
104	1362	43	* 304	I	† 1844	641	158	190	5013	4159	† 209	
9172												

and of 75 used as Adjectives, and consequently agreeing with the words they qualify.^{*} used as Substantives, and 5 used as Conjunctions. all interrogative sentences are excluded.

From my Classification of the Irregular Verbs [pp. 38-51], and the English Infinitives, with their various renderings in French [pp. 57-71, and 86-88], it will be seen, that they were drawn up, with a view of not only facilitating research among the latter, but also of enabling English-speaking Pupils, to remember, so long as they continue *to think* in their native tongue, the Verbs which come under the denomination of the former. I venture to doubt, if any Alphabetical List of Words, drawn up in French, has invariably attained this end with English students.

While I have ventured to make some suggestions on the manner of writing the Exercises [p. 90], and have, at the end of the Index, referred to their *Degree of difficulty*, it is earnestly requested, that the correct French of all Exercises, be, as far as possible, learnt by heart, and to recollect, that the ear and tongue, play quite as important a part in Colloquial French, as memory.

The 3110 Sentences, which I have selected for the Exercises, are concise; they were written for the purpose of teaching the *Structure of the Language*, not with the intention of giving a large number of different words, which only overburden the memory of the young, and which, may always be found, when wanted, in the dictionary.

I purposely refrained from giving the meaning of English Words, elsewhere than in the Vocabulary, which contains upwards of 1600 French Words, exclusive of the Irregular Verbs, and nearly 900 definitions of Verbs, contained in the body of the book. I contend, that had I done so, it would have been detrimental to the progress of pupils, who should, as early as possible, be induced to consult a dictionary, and thus, imperceptibly, become acquainted with many definitions and expressions, which otherwise, might not, for a long time, have presented themselves to their observation.

The expression of my deep obligation, is hereby tendered to M. JULES BLUM, and FREDERIC SWANN, ESQ., B.A., one of the Assistant Masters in DAME ALICE OWEN'S SCHOOL, no less for the kind assistance they have given me, in bringing this work through the press, than for the valuable suggestions they have made.

In conclusion, I feel confident, that my labour will be lost, unless the zealous co-operation of masters and pupils is granted me, and this help I crave at their hands.

ELMCROFT,
NORTH FINCHLEY.

J. F. P. M.

RULES AND EXAMPLES.

[COLUMN 1.]

THE SUBJECT.

1. The Subject usually precedes the Verb :

My brother likes history. | *Mon frère aime l'histoire.*
1 8

2. In questions, the Subject, if represented by a Substantive, also precedes the Verb ; but in order to draw a distinction between an Affirmative and an Interrogative Sentence, a Pronoun, corresponding with the Substantive in gender and number, is inserted, and placed immediately after the Verb :

Does your brother like history ? | *Votre frère aime-t-il l'histoire ?*
1 8 1

3. The Subject is placed after the Verb :

- (i.) In Interrogative Sentences and exclamations, in which it is represented by a Pronoun :

Does he like history ? | *Aime-t-il l'histoire ?*
8 1

Why did not I witness their defeat ! | *Que n'ai-je pu voir leur défaite !*

- (ii.) When a transposition of words, dependent on the Subject, takes place :

Let us listen to the advice which our friends give us. | *Écoutez les conseils que nous donnent nos amis.*
8 1

- (iii.) In connexion with the Present and Imperfect Tenses of the Subjunctive Mood, not preceded by *que*, and used to express a wish or a threat :

May you succeed ! | *Puissiez-vous réussir !*
8 1

Were I to repent of it ! | *Dussé-je m'en repentir !*
8 1

- (iv.) In a sentence which begins with an Impersonal Verb, or with } the words *thus* [ainsi], *such* [tel] :

Good news reached us. | *Il nous est arrivé de bonnes nouvelles.*
8 1

Thus ended his journey. | *Ainsi se termina son voyage.*
8 1

Such was the state of affairs. | *Tel était l'état des affaires.*
8 1

- (v.) In the case of *however* [si...que, tout...que], *whatever* [quel (variable) que], *whatever* [quelque (invariable) que] :

However difficult my task may be... | *Si difficile que soit ma tâche...*
Whatever might be his opinion. | *Quelle que fût son opinion.*
Whatever great orators these preachers were. | *Quelque grands orateurs que fussent ces prédicateurs.*

(vi.) In intercalar quotations :

"Soldiers!" exclaimed he, "let us attack them now."	"Soldats!" s'écria-t-il, "attaquons-les maintenant."
--	---

(vii.) After—

à peine, scarcely ;	combien, { how much ;	en vain, in vain ;
aussi, also ;	du moins, however ;	peut-être, perhaps ;
au moins, at least ;	encore, yet ;	toujours, still ;

placed at the beginning of the sentence :

Still, we shall never see them again.	Toujours est-il que nous ne les rever- rons jamais.
---------------------------------------	--

NOTE.—These exceptions explain why on Paradigm No. I the figure 1, which represents the subject, is inserted immediately after Col. 8, which represents the verb.

[COLUMN 2.]

NEGATION.

4. This column is almost always to be used in conjunction with one of the Negatives given in Cols. 10, 12, 14. They are :

(i.) But little, little, few, but few, not very.	{ ne—guère.	not	ne—pas.
by no means	{ ne—nullement. ne—aucunement.	not at all	{ ne—pas du tout. ne—point.
neither	ne—ni.	nothing	ne—rien.
never	ne—jamais.	nothing at all	ne—rien du tout.
no more	ne—plus.	scarcely	ne—guère.

all of which generally precede the Participle past.

(ii.) But	ne—que.	not any	{ ne—nul.
neither	ne—non plus.		{ ne—aucun.
nobody	ne—personne.	nowhere	ne—nulle part.

which always follow the Participle past.

Aucun, nul, personne, rien, when forming the subject of the verb, are placed at the beginning of the sentence [Col. 1], and take *ne* before the verb :

No one invited us. | Personne ne nous a invités.

Nothing was done. | Rien ne fut fait.

5. In Compound Tenses, twelve negatives given in Cols. 10 and 12, are placed between the Auxiliary and the Participle past :

We have not written that. | Nous n'avons pas écrit cela.

He was by no means beloved. | Il n'était nullement aimé.

6. Only six negatives mentioned in Col. 14, are placed after the Participle past :

We have written only that.

Nous n'avons écrit *que* cela.

He was not liked anywhere.

Il n'était aimé *nulle part*.

7. The negative *ne* is generally used without *pas* in *not to be able* [ne pouvoir]; *not to know how to, to be unable* [ne savoir]; *not to cease* [ne cesser]; *not to dare* [n'oser], when they are followed by a verb in the Infinitive Mood :

I cannot sing now.

Je *ne* puis chanter maintenant.

She did not cease talking.

Elle *ne* cessa de parler.

But the negation would be more emphatic if *pas* were expressed.

8. The negative *ne* is used alone :

(i.) Before the second verb in comparative expressions :

She writes better than she speaks.

Elle écrit mieux qu'elle *ne* parle.

That is different from what I thought.

C'est autre chose que je *ne* croyais.

(ii.) After the verbs *to be afraid* [avoir peur]; *to apprehend* [appréhender]; *to fear* [craindre]; *to tremble, to dread* [trembler]; followed by the conjunction *que*, and only when the principal clause is affirmative :

I am afraid you will change your mind.

J'ai peur que vous *ne* changiez d'avis.

We fear his coming [that he will come].

Nous craignons qu'il *ne* vienne.

If, instead of expressing *fear at his coming*, we wished to imply a desire that he should not disappoint by his absence, *ne* and *pas* would have to be expressed in the subordinate clause :

We fear that he will not come.

Nous craignons qu'il *ne* vienne *pas*.

If the principal clause contains a negative, then the subordinate clause rejects the use of *ne* :

I am not afraid of your changing your mind.

Je n'ai *pas* peur que vous changiez d'avis.

We do not fear his coming.

Nous *ne* craignons *pas* qu'il vienne.

(iii.) After the verbs *to contest* [contester], *to deny* [nier], *to doubt* [douter], *to disown* (not to agree) [disconvenir], used negatively :

I do not doubt he will go there.

Je *ne* doute *pas* qu'il n'y aille.

We do not deny his having arrived.

Nous *ne* nions *pas* qu'il *ne* soit arrivé.

When these verbs are used affirmatively, the negative disappears :

I doubt if he will go there.

Je doute qu'il y aille.

We deny his having arrived.

Nous nions qu'il soit arrivé.

In stating a positive fact, the negative also disappears from the subordinate clause :

We do not deny that there is a God.

Nous *ne* nions *pas* qu'il y ait un Dieu.

(iv.) After the verbs *to deny* [nier]; *to doubt* [douter]; conjugated interrogatively :

Do you doubt his going there?

Doutez-vous qu'il n'y aille?

(v.) After the verbs *to avoid* [éviter]; *to prevent* [empêcher]; *to take care* [prendre garde]; followed by *que*:

I avoided his asking me for it.

Will you prevent her doing her duty?

J'évitais qu'il ne me le demandât.

Empêchez-vous qu'elle ne fasse son devoir?

(vi.) After the conjunctions *for fear* [de crainte que], *lest* [de peur que], *unless* [à moins que], and also after *que* used elliptically for *à moins que*, *avant que*, *pour que*, &c.:

Unless they know it.

For fear he might write.

A moins qu'ils ne le sachent.

De crainte qu'il n'écrivit.

[COLUMN 3.]

CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS IN THE INDIRECT OBJECTIVE CASE.

9. In this Column are found the greater part of the Conjunctive Personal Pronouns in the Dative Case:

Me,...me, to me, to myself;

Te,...thee, to thee, to thyself;

Se,...to one's self, to himself, to herself;

We shall write to you no more.

They have never spoken to each other.

We have more than once written to them.

Nous,...us, to us, to ourselves, to each other, to one another;

Vous,...you, to you, to yourself, to yourselves, to each other, to one another;

Se,...to themselves, to each other, to one another.

Nous ne vous écrirons plus.

Ils ne se sont jamais parlé.

Nous leur avons écrit plus d'une fois.

NOTE.—The last two examples shew that Pronouns in the Dative case, do not exercise any influence over the Participle past.

10. All Pronouns in the Dative case, except *to him*, *to her*, *lui*; *to them*, *leur*, precede the Pronouns in the Accusative [Direct Objective] case:

He has sent it to me.

He has sent it to him.

Il me l'a envoyé. [Rule.]

Il le lui a envoyé. [Exception.]

This Rule explains the reason of there being two columns [Cols. 3 and 5] devoted to the place of Pronouns in the Dative case on Paradigm 1.

11. In sentences containing more than one of these Pronouns, the corresponding Disjunctive Pronouns are to be used:

We shall write to you and to her.

Nous écrirons à vous et à elle.

12. A few Reflexive Verbs are conjugated with these Pronouns, and their Participle past, although preceded by *être*, does not vary :

We did not write [have not written] those letters to each other.

¹ ⁸ ² ¹⁰ ¹³
Nous ne *nous* sommes pas *écrit* ces lettres

¹ ² ³ ⁸ ¹⁰ ¹³
They have often sent presents to each other

¹ ⁸ ¹¹ ¹³ ³
Elles *se* sont souvent *envoyé* des cadeaux

13. If however, a Pronoun in the Accusative case [Col. 4] enters into the composition of the sentence, then the Participle past must agree with it :

We have not written them to each other.

¹ ⁸ ² ¹⁰ ¹³ ⁴ ³
Nous ne *nous* *les* sommes pas *écrites*.

¹ ² ³ ⁴ ⁸ ¹⁰ ¹³
They have often sent them to each other.

¹ ³ ⁴ ⁸ ¹¹ ¹³
Ils *se* *les* sont souvent *envoyés*.

This Rule explains why such prominence is given in Paradigm No. 1 to the Pronouns in the Accusative case.

[COLUMN 4.]

CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS IN THE DIRECT OBJECTIVE CASE.

14. This Column gives all the Conjunctive Personal Pronouns in the Direct Objective [Accusative] case :

Me,...me, myself ;

Te,...thee, thyself ;

Se,...one's self ;

Le,...him, it ;

La,...her it ;

He has received *him* well.

¹ ⁸ ¹³ ⁴ ¹¹

He has received *her* well.

He has received *them* [m. p.] well.

He has received *them* [f. p.] well.

Nous,...us, ourselves, each other, one another ;

Vous,...you, yourself, yourselves, each other, one another ;

Se,...themselves, each other, one another ;

Les,...them.

Il l'a bien *reçu*.

¹ ⁴ ⁸ ¹¹ ¹³

Il l'a bien *reçue*.

Il *les* a bien *reçus*.

Il *les* a bien *reçues*.

NOTE.—On Paradigm No. 1 these Pronouns are Printed in RED, for the purpose of reminding the Student, that, whenever one of these Pronouns in the Accusative case occurs in the sentence, the Participle past always agrees in gender and number with these Pronouns.

15. The greater part of Reflexive Verbs are conjugated by means of these Pronouns; hence the agreement of their Participles past in the compound tenses :

My brother has enjoyed himself.

My sister has enjoyed herself.

My brothers have enjoyed themselves.

My sisters have enjoyed themselves.

Mon frère s'est amusé.

Ma sœur s'est amusée.

Mes frères se sont amusés.

Mes sœurs se sont amusées.

16. If the pronoun *se* is in the Dative case, and consequently means *to one's self, to one another, to each other*, as it is the case with verbs such as *se dire, se donner, s'écrire, se parler*, and a few others, the Participle past, although it is invariably preceded by *être*, is always to be written in the masculine singular, and does not vary :

My brother has given [to] himself the trouble.

My sister has given herself the trouble.

My brothers have given themselves the trouble.

My sisters have given themselves the trouble.

Mon frère s'est donné la peine.

Ma sœur s'est donné la peine.

Mes frères se sont donné la peine.

Mes sœurs se sont donné la peine.

But the agreement takes place, if an Accusative case precedes :

The trouble which he has taken.

The trouble which she has taken.

The trouble which they have taken.

The trouble which they have taken.

La peine qu'il s'est donnée.

La peine qu'elle s'est donnée.

La peine qu'ils se sont donnée.

La peine qu'elles se sont donnée.

[COLUMN 5.]

CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS IN THE INDIRECT OBJECTIVE CASE.

17. In addition to the pronouns in the Dative case in Col. 3, all of which are placed *before* those in the Accusative case, there are *only two* which occupy Col. 5 and are placed after the Accusative case :

Lui, to him, to her, to it.

Leur, to them.

You have sent him this box.

Those girls have not spoken to them.

Vous lui avez envoyé cette boîte.

Ces filles ne leur ont pas parlé.

18. With the exception of the pronouns *lui, leur* [Col. 5], *y* [Col. 6], all pronouns in the Dative case precede those in the Accusative case :

They [have] always told him so.

I have always been told so.

On le lui a toujours dit.

On me l'a toujours dit.

19. The personal pronoun *leur* [to them], does not take *s*, and must not be mistaken for the possessive adjective *leur, leurs* [their]; nor for the possessive pronouns *le leur, les leurs*, [theirs].

We have returned their copy books [to them].

We have sent them theirs.

Nous leur avons renvoyé leur cahiers.

Nous leur avons envoyé les leurs.

[COLUMN 6.]

THE PRONOUN **Y** AND THE ADVERB OF PLACE **Y**.

20. The pronoun *y* [to him, to her, to it, to them, in him, in her, in it, in them, &c.] is generally used in speaking of things :

*I am acquainted with misfortunes,
and can sympathize with them.*

*The more I think of them, the more I
regret them.*

*J'ai connu le malheur, et j'y sais
compâtir.*

Plus j'y pense, plus je les regrette.

21. It is often used instead of *à lui* [to him], *à elle* [to her], *à eux* [to them], *à elles* [to them], with Reflexive verbs, such as *to expect* [*s'attendre à*], *to trust* [*se fier à*]; but only when no equivocal meaning can arise :

*I never [have] trusted [myself to]
him.*
1 2 10 8 13 4

She [has] expected [herself to] it.
1 8 13 4 6

Je ne m'y suis jamais fié.
1 2 4 6 8 10 13

Elle s'y est attendue.
1 4 6 8 13

22. It is also used in replying to a question containing a Dative :

Do you think of them?

I often do [think of them].
8 1 8 20
1 11 8 6

Pensez-vous à elles?

J'y pense souvent.
8 1 20
1 6 8 11

23. As an adverb of place, meaning *there, thither*, *y* is often used as an expletive :

*Are they coming into the country this
year?*

No, they will not [come hither].

Were you going to church?

Yes, I was [going thither].

*Viendront-ils à la campagne cette
année-ci?*

Non, ils n'y viendront pas.

Alliez-vous à l'église?

Oui, j'y allais.

[COLUMN 7.]

THE PRONOUN **EN** IN THE GENITIVE OR ABLATIVE CASE.

24. This conjunctive personal pronoun is much more frequently used in French than any of its many equivalents are in English. It chiefly applies to places and things, and is also used in speaking of persons.

It represents :

*Of him, of her, of it, of them; of this, of that; from him, from her, from it,
from them; from this, from that, about him, about her, about it, about them;
its, their [preceded by a verb and followed by a substantive]; some, any, them.*

Were you ever in Germany?
Oh! yes; I come from it.
What do you think of him?
How many brothers has he?
Three. Not any.
I have none left [of them].
As for their country-seat, its situation
is most delightful.

I like the capital; its inhabitants are
so active.

NOTE.—*En* does not generally require the agreement of the Participle past, and it is for this reason, that its last letter only is printed in RED in Paradigm I.

25. Grammarians are not unanimous on the rules relating to the agreement of the Participle past preceded by *en*; but the agreement generally takes place when the pronoun *en* may be said to be superfluous:

The letters which we have received | *Les lettres que nous en avons reçues.*
from him.

The agreement does not take place when this pronoun cannot be dispensed with:

War has killed many men, slander has destroyed many more of them.
La guerre a tué bien des hommes, la médisance en a tué bien davantage.

NOTE.—In the Paradigm on the agreement of the Participle past, illustrations are given to shew when the Participle preceded by *en* agrees, and when it remains invariable.

[COLUMN 8.]

THE VERB.

26. This column points out the place occupied by the simple tenses of all transitive and intransitive verbs, and by the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être*, in simple and compound tenses:

That mother loves her children.

He does his work well.

We had many books.

They would have been pleased.

Cette mère aime ses enfants.

Il fait bien son ouvrage.

Nous avions beaucoup de livres.

Elles auraient été contentes.

27. Compound tenses are more frequently used in French than in English, and both the Imperfect and Past tenses *I was*, *I did*, etc., are always to be rendered in French by the compound of the Present *I have been*, *I have done*, etc., when the action referred to, was finished at some time fully past:

I did nothing but write the whole day.

They were absent last week.

Je n'ai fait qu'écrire toute la journée.

Ils ont été absents la semaine dernière.

28. The four forms of the English Past tense, namely :

<i>The complete</i>	I wrote,	} correspond to	{	J'écrivis.
<i>The emphatic</i>	I did write,			J'écrivais.
<i>The progressive</i>	I was writing,			J'écrivais.
<i>The frequentative</i>	I used to write,			J'écrivais.

But these four English forms are not always to be rendered, the first by the French *Past definite*, the last three by the French *Imperfect*, because the compound of the Present *I have written*, or Past indefinite, *j'ai écrit*, which is a favourite tense in French, comes in for a large share in many of their renderings.

29. The English progressive form, *I was writing*, is translated by *j'écrivais*, when the action was unfinished at some specified time :

I was writing when he paid us a visit. | *J'écrivais quand il nous a fait une visite.*

30. The Past Definite refers to a period of time wholly past, and excludes all idea of connexion with present time :

Cæsar introduced monarchical government into Rome. | *César introduisit le gouvernement monarchique à Rome.*

Did not Charlemagne transmit his title of Emperor to his descendants ? | *Charlemagne ne transmit-il pas le titre d'empereur à ses descendants ?*

We frequently wrote to them. | *Nous leur écrivîmes souvent.*

31. It is generally used in its simple and compound forms, after *as soon as* [dès que], *so soon as* [aussitôt que], *when* [quand, lorsque] :

So soon as he saw us. | *Aussitôt qu'il nous vit.*
When they had done talking. | *Quand ils eurent fini de parler.*

32. The Past Indefinite is often used to describe an action recently completed, and also to connect a past action with present time :

I received a letter this evening. | *J'ai reçu une lettre ce soir.*
I breakfasted alone this morning. | *J'ai déjeuné seul ce matin.*
I did not go out to-day. | *Je ne suis pas sorti aujourd'hui.*

33. But in describing an action fully past, which would sever the relation between past and present time, other adjuncts being used, it would also be correct to use the Past Definite :

I received a letter last night. | *Je reçus une lettre hier soir.*
I breakfasted alone yesterday morning. | *Je déjeunai seul hier matin.*
I went out yesterday. | *Je sortis hier.*

34. The Future often represents the English Present, when referring to an event which has not yet come to pass :

When he has done his exercise. | *Quand il aura fait son thème.*

35. The English Future and Future Perfect are frequently translated in the Subordinate Clause by the Present and Preterite of the Subjunctive Mood :

We do not believe they will do it. | *Nous ne croyons pas qu'ils le fassent.*
I do not fancy she will have arrived. | *Je ne soupçonne pas qu'elle soit arrivée.*

36. The Present time of the Conditional Mood has two forms in its Compound tenses :

I should have had { i. *J'aurais eu.* | *I should have been* { i. *J'aurais été.*
 ii. *J'eusse eu.* | ii. *J'eusse été.*

J'aurais followed by a Participle Past denotes the time at which a thing would have been undertaken; *j'eusse* points out more definitely the time at which the action would have been completed:

I should have been engaged in writing. | *J'aurais écrit.*
I should have finished writing. | *J'eusse écrit.*

37. The second form of the Conditional Past is often mistaken for the Pluperfect of the Subjunctive:

It was no longer dark, but it would have been gross exaggeration to say that daylight had appeared. | Il ne faisait plus nuit, mais *c'eût été* une grosse exagération de dire qu'il faisait jour.
Situated as we were, it would perhaps have been more advisable on our part to submit to such vexations. | Peut-être dans notre situation, *eût-il été* plus sage de céder à ces tracasseries.

38. This second form would be in the Pluperfect of the Subjunctive, if it were found in the Dependent Clause:

I did not believe it would have been an exaggeration to say that... | Je ne croyais pas que *c'eût été* une exagération de dire que...
We did not think it would have been more advisable to... | Nous ne pensions pas qu'il *eût été* plus sage de...

39. The Conditional is often used after *quand* [when], *quand même* [even when], in the sense of *if*:

Even if they were to invite me, I should not go. | *Quand même* ils m'*inviteraient*, je n'irais pas.

40. The Conditional is used in rendering the English Past, in a sentence in which these two tenses are connected by *when*, *if* [quand], used instead of *although* [bien que, encore que, quoique]:

I should continue taking an interest in them, even if they objected to it. | Je continuerais à m'intéresser à eux, *quand*
 1 8 16 20
 cela leur *déplairait*.
Were they to hate me, I should not complain. | *Quand* ils me *haïraient*, je ne m'en plaindrais pas.

41. The Hypothetical Tense is also rendered by the Pluperfect Subjunctive of the verb *devoir*, used interrogatively:

Were they to write to him, he would not reply. | Dussent-ils lui écrire, il ne leur répondrait pas.
 | [Or] *Quand même* ils lui *écriraient*, etc.

In the former instance, *devoir* is used in the Subjunctive Mood, through the ellipsis of the impersonal verb *to happen* [arriver]:

If it happened that they were to write to him. | *Quand même il arriverait* [s'il arrivait] qu'ils *dussent* lui écrire.

42. The Conditional sometimes takes the place of the Suppositive Mood:

It would appear that Parliament will not again meet this year. | Il paraîtrait que le parlement ne s'*assemblerait* plus cette année-ci.

43. The Imperative Mood conjugated affirmatively requires all the Pronouns contained in Cols. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, to be placed immediately after it, when they are joined to the Verb by a hyphen. In the Imperative affirmative *me*, *te*, become *moi*, *toi*:

Write to me when you can. | *Écrivez-moi* quand vous pourrez.
 8 3
Walk about where you like. | *Promène-toi* où il te plaira.
 8 4

There is no change in the place assigned to the Pronouns *il*, *elle*, *on*, *ils*, *elles*, whether used affirmatively or negatively:

Let them send them to you. | Qu'ils vous les envoient.

44. In the Imperative Mood the pronouns in the Dative case, *moi, toi* (Col. 3), come after those in the Accusative [Col. 4]:

Give it to me.

Donnez-⁴le-³moi.

Send them to me.

Envoyez-⁴les-³moi.

45. But the pronouns *nous, vous*, keep the order they occupy in the Paradigm:

Give it to us.

Donnez-³nous-⁴le.

Explain it among yourselves.

Expliquez-³vous-⁴le.

Help yourself to it.

Servez-³vous-⁴en.

Send them to us.

Envoyez-³nous-⁶les.
³ ⁴

46. With the Imperative Negative, all Pronouns precede the Verb in the order given:

Do not tell [it to] him.

Ne ²le ⁴lui ⁵dites ⁸pas.

Let us no longer laugh at her.

(Ne ²nous ⁴en ⁷moquons ⁸plus.
(Ne ²nous ⁴moquons ⁷plus ¹⁰d'elle.
² ⁴ ⁷ ¹⁰ ¹⁹

47. Sometimes the place of these pronouns, although used affirmatively, does not necessarily vary in the case of the latter of two verbs:

Take it and read it yourself.

| Prenez-²le et ⁴le lisez vous-même.

48. A euphonic *s* is added to the final *e* of the second person singular of the Imperative, when followed by *y, en*:

Think thou better of it.

| Penses-²y mieux.

Give some of them to your brother.

| Donne-²en à ton frère.

49. The adverb of place *y* accompanied by another pronoun is generally represented in the Imperative by the adverb *là*, except with pronouns of the third person, and an Imperative used negatively:

Take us thither.

| Conduisez-²nous ⁴là.

Let her go there.

| Qu'elle ²y aille.

Do not write to us [while we are] there.

| Ne ²nous ⁴y écrivez pas.

50. In the Imperative Affirmative of Reflexive Verbs used with *y*, an irregularity in the place of pronouns occurs only in the second person singular:

Trust him.

| Fies-⁶y-toi

Let him trust him.

| Qu'il ⁴s'y fie.

Let us trust him.

| Fions-⁴nous-y.

Trust him.

| Fiez-⁴vous-y.

Let them trust him.

| Qu'ils ⁴s'y fient.
⁴ ⁶

But:

Trust him not.

| Ne ²t'y fie pas.
² ⁴ ⁶ ⁸ ¹⁰

51. In the Imperative Affirmative, *moi, toi*, followed by *en*, become once more *me, te*:

Tell me all about it, pray.

| De grâce, instruis-²mi'en.

Make fun of him, for he deserves it.

| Amuse-²t'en, car il le mérite.

COMPOUND TENSES.

52. The principal Verbs which generally form their Compound Tenses in English with *to have*, and in French with *être*, are :

<i>to arrive,</i>	<i>arriver,</i>	<i>to die,</i>	<i>mourir,</i>	<i>to intervene,</i>	<i>intervenir,</i>
<i>attain,</i>	<i>parvenir,</i>		<i>décéder,</i>	<i>remain,</i>	<i>demeurer,</i>
<i>be born,</i>	<i>naître,</i>	<i>enter,</i>	<i>entrer,</i>		<i>rester,</i>
<i>become,</i>	<i>devenir,</i>	<i>go,</i>	<i>aller,</i>	<i>start for,</i>	<i>partir,</i>
<i>come again,</i>	<i>revenir,</i>	<i>go out,</i>	<i>sortir,</i>	<i>succeed,</i>	<i>parvenir.</i>

We know that they have not arrived.
I was not aware of your having gone out.

Nous savons qu'ils ne sont pas arrivés.
Je ne savais pas que vous fussiez sorti.

53. Some verbs take *avoir* to imply action, and *être* to express the result of such action :

<i>to appear,</i>	<i>apparaître,</i>	<i>to fall again,</i>	<i>retomber,</i>	<i>to increase,</i>	<i>accroître,</i>
<i>blossom,</i>	<i>fleurir,</i>	<i>go down.</i>	<i>descendre,</i>	<i>land,</i>	<i>aborder,</i>
<i>decay,</i>	<i>déchoir,</i>	<i>go in,</i>	<i>entrer,</i>	<i>pass,</i>	<i>passer,</i>
<i>dwell,</i>	<i>demeurer,</i>	<i>go out,</i>	<i>sortir.</i>	<i>remain,</i>	<i>rester,</i>
<i>disappear,</i>	<i>disparaître,</i>	<i>go up,</i>	<i>monter,</i>	<i>set out,</i>	<i>partir,</i>
<i>escape,</i>	<i>échapper,</i>	<i>go up again,</i>	<i>remonter,</i>	<i>set out again,</i>	<i>repartir,</i>
<i>fall,</i>	<i>tomber,</i>	<i>grow,</i>	<i>croître,</i>	<i>start for,</i>	<i>partir.</i>

I did not pay any attention to that.

I did not remember that.

I have done it inadvertently.

That boy has grown very much.

How tall they have grown !

Cette chose m'a échappé.

Cette chose m'est échappée.

Ce garçon a bien grandi.

Comme ils sont grands !

54. No difficulty can arise in the place of the various Pronouns with Reflexive Verbs, if it be remembered :

(i.) That the Pronoun which forms the subject of the Verb alone changes its position in an interrogative sentence :

Has he washed himself?

S'est-il lavé ?

Has he not washed himself?

Ne s'est-il pas lavé ?

(ii.) That the pronouns *me, te, se, le, la, les, nous, vous, se* [Col. 3, 4], *y*, [Col. 6], *en* [Col. 7], always precede the Verb [Col. 8], except in the second person singular and the first and second persons plural of the Imperative affirmative :

They have sent them to each other.

Ils se les sont envoyés.

Did not we complain of them ?

Ne nous en sommes-nous pas plaints ?

She has never enjoyed herself there.

Elle ne s'y est jamais amusée.

(iii.) That the Pronouns *lui, leur* [Col. 5], are never used with a Reflexive Verb, and are to be translated by *à lui, à elle, à eux, à elles* [Col. 20]:

I should not have applied to him.

Je ne me serais pas adressé à lui.

Have you applied to them?

Vous êtes-vous adressé à elles?

55. The Past participle of a Reflexive Verb agrees in gender and number with the Pronouns in the Accusative case only [Col. 4]:

She has taken a walk.

Elle s'est promenée.

We should have risen earlier.

Nous nous serions levés de meilleure
heure.

56. The agreement does not take place if the Reflexive Pronoun is in the Dative [Col. 3], and if no Pronoun in the Accusative precedes the Verb:

We should have spoken to each other.

Nous nous serions parlé.

Did we not write to each other?

Ne nous sommes-nous pas écrit?

57. But if, in addition to a Pronoun in the Dative, the sentence also contains a Pronoun in the Accusative, then the agreement of the Participle past necessarily takes place:

We should have spoken it [that language] to each other.

Nous nous la serions parlée.

Did we not write them [those letters] to each other?

Ne nous les sommes-nous pas écrites?

58. The agreement also takes place when the Verb is preceded by *que* [whom, which, that, whether expressed or understood in English]:

The language which we spoke to each other.

La langue que nous sommes
parlée.

Here are the letters we wrote to each other.

Voici les lettres que nous nous sommes écrites.

IDIOMATIC TENSES.

59. The subjoined Comparative Tables shew at a glance the different renderings of all the Primary, Secondary and Idiomatic Tenses of the English Verb, both in the *Active* and in the *Passive* voice.

No. 2.—Paradigm shewing the difference between all the
ENGLISH VERB. ACTIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.									
	PRIMARY.			SECONDARY.			IDIOMATIC.			
Indicative.	<i>Present.</i>									
	I speak
	I am speaking
	I do speak...
	<i>Present Perfect.</i>									
	I have spoken
	I have been speaking
	<i>Imperfect.</i>									
I was speaking
I did speak
<i>Pluperfect.</i>										
I had been speaking
I had spoken

Moods and Tenses of the English and of the French Verb.

VOICE. FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.					
	SIMPLE.		COMPOUND.		IDIOMATIC.	
Indicative.	<i>Present.</i>					
	je parle					
	je parle					
	je parle					
			<i>Past Indefinite.</i>			
	... ..		j'ai parlé			
	... ..		j'ai parlé			
	... ..		... ..		{ je dois parler*	
	... ..		... ..		{ je suis obligé de parler*	
	... ..		... ..		{ il me faut parler*	
	... ..		... ..		je suis sur le point de parler*	
	... ..		... ..		j'ai à parler*	
	... ..		... ..		je vais parler*	
	... ..		... ..		{ j'ai dû parler*	
	... ..		... ..		{ j'ai été obligé de parler*	
	... ..		... ..		je viens de parler*	
	... ..		... ..		j'ai été sur le point de parler	
	<i>Imperfect.</i>					
	je parlais					
	je parlais					
			<i>Pluperfect.</i>			
	... ..		j'avais parlé		{ je devais parler	
	... ..		j'avais parlé		{ j'étais obligé de parler	
	... ..		... ..		{ il me fallait parler	
	... ..		... ..		j'étais sur le point de parler	
	... ..		... ..		j'avais à parler	
	... ..		... ..		j'allais parler	
	... ..		... ..		{ j'avais dû parler ; j'avais	
	... ..		... ..		{ été obligé de parler	
	... ..		... ..		{ il m'avait fallu parler	
	... ..		... ..		je venais de parler	

conjugation of the Idiomatic Tenses : tu dois parler ; il te faudra parler ; nous venons de parler.

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.								
	SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.			IDIOMATIC.		
Indicative.	<i>Past Definite.</i>								
	je parlai								
	...	...	...	<i>Past Anterior.</i>					
	...	...	...	j'eus parlé			{ je dus parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ je fus obligé de parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ il me fallut parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ je fus sur le point de parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ j'eus à parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ j'eus eu à parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ il m'eut fallu parler		
Indicative.	<i>Future.</i>								
	je parlerai								
	tu parleras								
	il parlera								
	nous parlerons								
	vous parlerez								
	ils parleront								
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je veux parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je veux que tu parles [Subj.]		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je veux qu'il parle [Subj.]		
Indicative.							nous voulons parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je veux que vous parliez [Subj.]		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je veux qu'ils parlent [Subj.]		
	je parlerai						je veux parler		
			
				<i>Future Anterior.</i>					
	...	...	...	j'aurai parlé					
						

No. 2.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

ACTIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.				
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.			IDIOMATIC.
Potential.					I shall have to speak ...
					I shall have had to speak ...
					I shall go and speak ...
					I shall have gone to speak ...
	<i>Present.</i>				
	I may speak	}	...	...
	I may be speaking				
	I can speak				
	I can be speaking				
	I must speak	}	...	...
	I must be speaking				
	May I speak?	}	...	...
	(be allowed to)				
	May I speak!	}	...	...
	(God grant)				
		<i>Present Perfect.</i>			
		I may have spoken	}	...	
		I may have been speaking			
		I can have spoken	}	...	
		I can have been speaking			
		I must have spoken	}	...	
		I must have been speaking			
	<i>Past.</i>				
	I might speak	}	...	...
	I could speak				
	I would speak				
	Thoushouldst speak				

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.					
	SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.		IDIOMATIC.
Conditional.	<i>{ je devrai parler</i> <i>{ je serai obligé de parler</i> <i>{ il me faudra parler</i> <i>{ j'aurai dû parler</i> <i>{ j'aurai été obligé de parler</i> <i>{ il m'aura fallu parler</i> <i>j'irai parler</i> <i>je serai allé parler</i>
	<i>{ je puis parler</i> <i>{ il se peut que je parle</i> <i>{ je sais parler</i> <i>{ il est possible que je parle</i>
	<i>il faut que je parle</i>
	<i>puis-je parler ? (Indicative Mood)</i>
	<i>puissé-je parler ! (Subjunctive Mood)</i>
	<i>{ il se peut que j'aie parlé</i> <i>{ je puis avoir parlé</i>
	<i>il est possible que j'aie parlé</i>
	<i>{ il faut que j'aie parlé</i> <i>{ je dois avoir parlé</i>
	<i>{ je pourrais parler</i> <i>{ il se pourrait que je parlasse</i> <i>{ je savais parler</i> <i>{ il était possible que je parlasse</i>
	<i>je voulais parler</i>
	<i>{ tu devrais parler</i>
	<i>{ il faudrait que tu parlasses</i>

No. 2.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

ACTIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.										
	PRIMARY.			SECONDARY.			IDIOMATIC.				
Potential.	He should speak ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	We would speak ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	You should speak	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	They should speak	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	I should speak	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	Thou wouldst speak	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	He would speak ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	We should speak ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	You would speak	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	They would speak	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	I should bespeaking	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	<i>Past Perfect.</i>										
	I might have spoken						
	I might have been speaking						
	I could have spoken						
	I could have been speaking						
	I would have spoken						
	I would have been speaking						
	I should have spoken						
	I should have been speaking						
	I should have to speak ...										

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.						
	SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.			IDIOMATIC.
Conditional.	...	...	...	...	..	...	{ <i>il devrait</i> parler <i>il faudrait</i> qu' <i>il parlât</i> <i>nous voulions</i> parler
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>il faudrait</i> que <i>nous parlâ-</i> <i>sions</i> <i>vous devriez</i> parler
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>il faudrait</i> que <i>vous parlâssiez</i> <i>ils devraient</i> parler
	...	...	...	...	...	..	{ <i>il faudrait</i> qu' <i>ils parlâssent</i>
	<i>Present.</i>						
	je parlerais						
	tu parlerais						
	il parlerait						
	nous parlerions						
	vous parleriez						
	ils parleraient						
	je parlerais						
	...	...	...	...	...	...	<i>j'aurais</i> pu parler
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>j'aurais</i> su parler <i>il était</i> possible que <i>j'eusse</i> <i>parlé</i>
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>j'aurais</i> } voulu parler <i>j'eusse</i> }
							<i>il faudrait</i> que <i>j'eusse</i> parlé
	<i>Past.</i>						
	...	...	...	{ <i>j'aurais</i> parlé <i>or</i> <i>j'eusse</i> parlé			
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>je devrais</i> parler <i>je serais</i> obligé de parler <i>il me</i> faudrait parler

No. 2.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

ACTIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.				
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.			IDIOMATIC.
Subjunctive.					I should have had to speak ...
					I should go and speak ...
					I should have gone to speak...
					I ought to speak ...
					I ought to have spoken ...
	<i>Present.</i>				
	If I speak ...	...	...	...	...
		<i>Present Perfect.</i>			
		If I have spoken	...	...	...
	<i>Past.</i>				
	If I spoke ...	...	...	...	...
		<i>Past Perfect.</i>			
Imperative.		If I had spoken	...	...	...
	<i>Future.</i>				
	If I speak ...	}	...	...	...
	If I shall speak				
	If I should speak ...				
		<i>Future Perfect.</i>			
		If I shall have spoken	...	...	...
		If I should have spoken	...	...	...
					<i>Hypothetical.</i>
					If I were to speak
					Were I to speak }
	Speak, speak thou }	...	...	...	...
	Do thou speak }	...	...	...	...
	[Let him speak] ...	...	...	...	...
	[Let us speak] ...	...	...	...	...
	Speak, speak you }	...	...	...	...
	Do you speak }	...	...	...	...
	[Let them speak] ...	...	...	...	...

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.								
	SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.			IDIOMATIC.		
Subjunctive.	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ j'aurais eu à parler j'aurais été obligé de parler il m'aurait fallu parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	j'irais parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je serais allé parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	je devrais parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ il faudrait que je parlasse j'aurais dû parler		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	{ il faudrait que j'eusse parlé		
	<i>Present.</i> en cas que je parle			...	...	...	<i>Indicative.</i> or: si je parle (Present)		
	...	...	...	<i>Preterite.</i> en cas que j'aie parlé			or: si j'ai parlé (Past Ind.) si je parlais (Imperfect)		
	<i>Imperfect.</i> en cas que je parlasse			...	...	...	or: si je parlais (Imperfect)		
	...	...	...	<i>Pluperfect.</i> si en cas que } j'eusse parlé			or: si j'avais parlé (Pluperfect)		
Imperative.	<i>Future.</i> en cas que je parle			...	...	...	or: si je parle (Present)		
	...	...	...	...	...	...	[Similar to the Imp. of Sub.]		
	...	...	...	en cas que j'aie parlé			or: si j'ai parlé (Indic. Mood, Present)		
	...	...	...	si j'eusse parlé					
	...	...	...	...	...	...	<i>Dussé-je</i> parler		
	<i>Present or Future.</i> parle								
	[qu'il parle]								
	parlons								
	parlez								
	[qu'ils parlent]								

No. 2.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

ACTIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	IDIOMATIC.
Infinitive.	<i>Present.</i> To speak ... ..		... ..
		<i>Perfect.</i> To have spoken	... ..
	<i>Participle Incomplete.</i> Speaking ... ..		... ..
		<i>Compound Perfect.</i> Having spoken ...	... ..
		<i>Participle Complete.</i> Spoken ... ..	... .. Having to speak

No. 3.—Paradigm shewing the difference between all the

ENGLISH VERB.

PASSIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	IDIOMATIC.
Indicative.	<i>Present.</i> I am invited ... ..		... ..
		<i>Present Perfect.</i> I have been invited	... ..
			I am to be invited
			I am about to be invited

* The words printed in *italics alone* are subject to inflexion in the
invités ; nous devons être invités ; ils vont être invités :

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	SIMPLE.	COMPOUND.	IDIOMATIC.
Infinitive.	<i>Present.</i> parler		
	... ..	<i>Preterite.</i> avoir parlé	
	<i>Participle Present.</i> parlant		
	... ..	ayant parlé	
	... ..	<i>Participle Past.</i> parlé	
	... ..	... ..	devant parler, ayant à parler

Moods and Tenses of the English and of the French Verb.

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	SIMPLE.	COMPOUND.	IDIOMATIC.
Indicative.	<i>Present.</i> Je suis invité		On m'invite*
	<i>Past Indefinite.</i> J'ai été invité	On m'a invité*
	On doit m'inviter
	Je dois être invité*
	Il faut qu'on m'invite (Sub. Pres.)
	Jesuis sur le point d'être invité

conjugation of the Idiomatic Tenses: *On nous invite*; *on nous a nous venons* d'être invités; *on n'a qu'a nous inviter.*

No. 3.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

PASSIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	IDIOMATIC.
Indicative.			I have to be invited ...
			I am going to be invited ...
			I have had to be invited ...
			I have just been invited ...
			I have only to be invited ...
	<i>Imperfect.</i> I was invited ...	...	...
		<i>Pluperfect.</i> I had been invited	...
			I was to be invited ...
			I was about to be invited ...
			I had to be invited ...
			I was going to be invited ...
			I had had to be invited ...
			I had just been invited ...
			I had only to be invited ...
	<i>Past.</i> I was invited ...	...	...
		<i>Past Perfect.</i> I had been invited	...
			I was to be invited ...

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.		TENSES.						
		SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.			IDIOMATIC.
Indicative.		{ On doit <i>m'inviter</i> <i>Je dois être invité</i> Il faut qu'on <i>m'invite</i> On va <i>m'inviter</i> <i>Je vais être invité*</i> On a dû <i>m'inviter</i> <i>J'ai dû être invité</i> Il a fallu qu'on <i>m'invite</i> On vient de <i>m'inviter</i> <i>Je viens d'être invité*</i> On n'a qu'à <i>m'inviter*</i>
								On <i>m'a invité</i>
								On <i>m'avait invité</i>
								{ On <i>devait m'inviter</i> <i>Je devais être invité</i> Il fallait qu'on <i>m'invitât</i> <i>J'étais sur le point d'être in-</i> <i>vitée</i>
								{ On <i>devait m'inviter</i> <i>Je devais être invité</i> Il fallait qu'on <i>m'invitât</i> On <i>allait m'inviter</i> <i>J'allais être invité</i> On <i>avait dû m'inviter</i> <i>J'avais dû être invité</i> Il <i>avait fallu qu'on m'invitât</i> On <i>venait de m'inviter</i> <i>Je venais d'être invité</i> On <i>n'avait qu'à m'inviter</i>
								On <i>m'invita</i>
								On <i>m'eut invité</i>
								{ On <i>dut m'inviter</i> <i>Je dus être invité</i> Il <i>fallut qu'on m'invitât</i>

No. 3.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

PASSIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.									
	PRIMARY.			SECONDARY.			IDIOMATIC.			
Indicative.							I was about to be invited ...			
							I had to be invited ...			
							I was going to be invited ...			
							I had only to be invited ...			
	<i>Future.</i>									
	(Simple Form.)									
	I shall be invited ...			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	Thou wilt be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	He will be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	We shall be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	You will be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	They will be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	(Emphatic Form.)									
	I will be invited ...			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	Thou shalt be in- vited ...			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	He shall be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	We will be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	You shall be invited			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	They shall be in- vited ...			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	<i>Future Perfect.</i>									
	I shall have been invited ...			...	...	...	...	...	...	...
							I shall have to be invited ...			
							I shall only have to be invited			
							I shall have had to be invited			
	<i>Present.</i>									
	I may be invited ..			...	...	...	...	...	...	...

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	SIMPLE.	COMPOUND.	IDIOMATIC.
Indicative.	...	...	<i>Je fus</i> sur le point d'être <i>invité</i>
	...	...	{ On dut <i>m'inviter</i>
	...	...	{ <i>Je dus</i> être <i>invité</i>
	...	...	{ Il fallut qu'on <i>m'invitât</i>
	...	...	{ On alla <i>m'inviter</i>
	...	...	{ <i>J'allai</i> être <i>invité</i>
	...	...	On n'eut qu'à <i>m'inviter</i>
	<i>Future.</i>		
	Je serai invité	...	On m'invitera
	Tu seras invité	...	On t'invitera
	Il sera invité	...	On l'invitera
	Nous serons invités	...	On nous invitera
	Vous serez invités	...	On vous invitera
	Elles seront invitées	...	On les invitera
	...	...	{ Je veux que l'on m'invite
	...	...	{ Je veux être invité
	...	...	Je veux qu'on t'invite
	...	...	Je veux qu'on l'invite
	...	...	{ Je veux qu'on nous invite
	...	...	{ Nous voulons être invités
	...	...	Je veux que l'on vous invite
	...	...	Je veux qu'on les invite
		<i>Future Anterior.</i>	
	...	J'aurai été invité	On m'aura <i>invité</i>
	...	...	{ On devra <i>m'inviter</i>
	...	...	{ Il faudra qu'on <i>m'invite</i>
	...	...	On n'aura qu'à <i>m'inviter</i>
	...	...	{ On aura dû <i>m'inviter</i>
	...	...	{ Il aura fallu qu'on <i>m'invite</i>
	...	...	{ <i>Je puis</i> être <i>invité</i>
	...	...	{ Il se peut qu'on <i>m'invite</i>
	...	...	{ Il se peut que <i>jè sois invité</i>

No. 3.—Continued.]

ENGLISH-VERB.

PASSIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.									
	PRIMARY.			SECONDARY.			IDIOMATIC.			
Potential.	I can be invited	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	I must be invited	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	May I be invited ?	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
	May I be invited !	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.					
	SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.		
Conditional.

{ On peut *m'inviter*
 { Il est possible qu'on *m'in-*
 vite
 { Il est possible que *je sois*
 invité
 { Il faut qu'on *m'invite*
 { On doit *m'inviter*
 { Peut-on *m'inviter*? [Indica-
 tive Mood]
 { *Puissé-je être invité!* [Sub-
 junctive Mood]
 { Il se peut qu'on *m'ait invité*
 { Il se peut que *j'aie été invité*
 { On peut *m'avoir invité*
 { Il est possible qu'on *m'ait*
 invité
 { Il est possible que *j'aie été*
 invité
 { Il faut que l'on *m'ait invité*
 { On doit *m'avoir invité*
 { On pourrait *m'inviter*
 { Il se pourrait qu'on *m'invitât*
 { On pourrait *m'inviter*
 { Il serait possible qu'on
 m'invitât
 { Il se pourrait que *je fusse*
 invité
 { Je voulais qu'on *m'invitât*
 { *Je voulais être invité*
 { Il faudrait qu'on *m'invitât*
 { Tu devrais être invité
 { Il faudrait qu'on l'*invitât*
 { Il devrait être invité
 { Nous voulions qu'on nous *in-*
 vitât
 { Nous voulions être invités
 { Il faudrait qu'on vous *invitât*
 { Vous devriez être invités
 { Il faudrait qu'on les *invitât*
 { Ils devraient être invités

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.						
	SIMPLE.			COMPOUND.			IDIOMATIC.
Conditional.	<i>Present.</i>						
	Je	serais	invité	On <i>m'</i> inviterait
	Tu	serais	invité	On <i>t'</i> inviterait
	Il	serait	invité	On <i>l'</i> inviterait
	Nous	serions	invités	On nous inviterait
	Vous	seriez	invités	On vous inviterait
	Ils	seraient	invités	On les inviterait
	{ On aurait pu <i>m'</i> inviter
	{ Il se pourrait qu'on <i>m'eût</i>
	{ <i>invité</i>
	{ On aurait pu <i>m'</i> inviter
	{ Il serait possible qu'on <i>m'eût</i>
	{ <i>invité</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ Il se pourrait que <i>j'eusse été</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>invité</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ J'aurais voulu qu'on <i>m'eût</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ <i>invité</i>
...		
...	...	...	...	...	...	<i>Past.</i>
...	...	...	{ J'aurais été	invité	...	On <i>m'</i> aurait <i>invité</i>
...	...	...	{ J'eusse été	invité	...	On <i>m'eût</i> <i>invité</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ On devrait <i>m'</i> inviter
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ Il faudrait qu'on <i>m'invitât</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	On n'aurait qu'à <i>m'</i> inviter
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ On aurait dû <i>m'</i> inviter
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ Il aurait fallu qu'on <i>m'in-</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ vitât
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ On devrait <i>m'</i> inviter
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ Il faudrait qu'on <i>m'invitât</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ On aurait dû <i>m'</i> inviter
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ Il aurait fallu qu'on <i>m'in-</i>
...	...	...	...	...	...	{ vitât

No. 3.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

PASSIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	IDIOMATIC.
Subjunctive.	<i>Present.</i> If I am invited ...	... ..	... ..
		<i>Present Perfect.</i> If I have been in- vited ... ..	... ..
	<i>Past.</i> If I was invited ...	... ..	... ..
		<i>Past Perfect.</i> If I had been in- vited ... ..	... ..
	<i>Future.</i> If I be invited ...	} ... ..	... ..
	If I shall be invited		... ..
	If I should be in- vited ... ..		... ..
		<i>Future Perfect.</i> If I shall have been invited ... ..	... ..
		If I should have been invited ...	... ..
			<i>Hypothetical.</i> If I were to be invited } Were I to be invited }
Imperative.	Be thou invited } Do thou be in- vited }	... ..	... ..
	[Let him be in- vited] ... ..	... ..	... ..
	[Let us be invited]	... ..	... ..
	Be you invited }	... ..	... ..
	Do you be invited }	... ..	... ..
	[Let them be in- vited] ... ..	... ..	... ..

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	SIMPLE.	COMPOUND.	IDIOMATIC.
Subjunctive.	<i>Present.</i> En cas que je sois invité ... ..	...	<i>Indicative.</i> Or : { si je suis invité si l'on m'invite
	...	<i>Preterite.</i> En cas que j'aie été invité	Or : { si j'ai été invité si l'on m'a invité
	<i>Imperfect.</i> En cas que je fusse invité ... ..	...	Or : { si j'étais invité si l'on m'invitait
	...	<i>Pluperfect.</i> Si { j'eusse En cas que { été invité	Or : { si j'avais été invité si l'on m'avait invité
	<i>Future.</i> En cas que je sois invité ... ..	...	Or : { si je suis invité si l'on m'invite
	...	...	[Similar to the Imperfect of the Subjunctive]
	...	En cas que j'aie été invité	Or : { si j'ai été invité si l'on m'a invité
	...	Si j'eusse été invité	
	...	...	Or : { dussé-je être invité dût-on m'inviter
	Sois invité	...	Qu'on t'invite
Imperative.	[Qu'il soit invité]	...	Qu'on l'invite
	Soyons invités	...	Qu'on nous invite
	Soyez invités	...	Qu'on vous invite
	[Qu'ils soient in- vités]	...	Qu'on les invite

No. 3.—*Continued.*]

ENGLISH VERB.

PASSIVE

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	IDIOMATIC.
Infinitive.	<i>Present.</i> To be invited		
		<i>Perfect.</i> To have been in- vited	
	<i>Participle Incomplete.</i> Being invited		
		<i>Compound Perfect.</i> Having been in- vited	
		<i>Participle Complete.</i> Invited	Having to be invited ... Having had to be invited ...

IRREGULAR

60. The annexed Table of Irregular Verbs is arranged in alphabetical order, according to their generally accepted meaning in English, and irrespective of the conjugation to which they belong in French; but their alphabetical order, according to their conjugation in French, is given in the third column.

NOTE.—Leaving aside obsolete and defective Verbs, which are contained in all Grammars, there may be said to be 174 Irregular Verbs, which are divided as follows:

Conjugation.	Total Number of Verbs.	Alphabetical order according to their conjugation in French.	Principal Verbs having no derivatives.	Model Verbs.	Derivative Verbs conjugated like Model Verbs.
I. (er)	4	No. 1— 4		2	2
II. (ir)	61	„ 5— 65	8	13	40
III. (oir)	16	„ 66— 81	11	2	3
IV. (re)	93	„ 82—174	12	20	61
	174		31	37	106

VOICE.

FRENCH VERB.

MOODS.	TENSES.		
	SIMPLE.	COMPOUND.	IDIOMATIC.
Infinitive.	<i>Present.</i> Être invité		
	...	<i>Præterite.</i> Avoir été invité	
	<i>Participle Present.</i> Étant invité		
	...	Ayant été invité	
	...	<i>Participle Past.</i> Invité	
	...	...	Devant être invité Ayant dû être invité

VERBS.

The 31 *Principal Verbs* like which no other Verbs are conjugated, are printed in heavy type: **absoudre**, to absolve.

The 37 *Model Verbs*, like which the 106 *Derivative Verbs* are conjugated, are printed in capitals; **ACQUÉRIR**, to acquire.

The 106 *Derivative Verbs*, which, with few exceptions, are conjugated like the *Model Verbs*, are printed in italics: *convenir*, to agree.

The *five Primitive Tenses* are given, and also the *Derivative Tenses*, which are formed *irregularly*; and although a separate column is set aside for the *Imperfect*, it will be seen that out of the 174 Verbs, only *two*, i.e.: *avoir*, *savoir*, form this Tense irregularly from the *Participle present*. Only five Verbs, *avoir*, *être*, *aller*, *savoir*, *vouloir*, are irregular in the *Imperative*.

No special column is given for the *Present of the Conditional*, nor for the *Imperfect of the Subjunctive*, because, whereas the former tense closely resembles the *Future* [je m'abstiendrai, je m'abstiendrais], the latter is always, without exception, formed from the second person singular of the *Past Definite* by the addition of *se*: *Tu acquies, que j'acquiesse*.

A *Participle Past* followed by an *asterisk*, denotes that the *Compound Tenses* are to be conjugated with *être*, to be.

It is needless to add, that if Teachers prefer using the Verbs in the order of their conjugation in French, the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, given in the third column, would produce in alphabetical order *aller*, *se en aller*, *envoyer*, *renvoyer*, *s'abstenir*, *accueillir*, etc.

IRREGULAR

Alphabetical order in English.	English Verbs.	Alphabetical order in French.	IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE			
			Present of the Infinitive.			Parti-
			Principal Verbs. ↓	Model Verbs. ↓	Derivative Verbs. ↓	Present.
	TO					
1	absolve	83	absoudre ... ..	... ..	... ..	absolvant
2	abstain	5	... ..	... ..	<i>abstenir</i> (s') 1	abstenant
3	acknowledge	152	... ..	... ..	<i>reconnaître</i> 2	reconnaissant
4	acquire	8	... ..	ACQUÉRIR	... ..	acquérant 3
5	admit	85	... ..	... ..	<i>admettre</i> 4	admettant
6	agree (about a thing)	17	... ..	... ..	<i>convenir</i> 5	convenant
7	allow ...	142	... ..	... ..	<i>permettre</i> 6	permettant
8	anticipate	47	... ..	... ..	<i>prévenir</i> 5	prévenant
9	appear	140	... ..	... ..	<i>paraître</i> 2	paraissant
10	assail	10	... ..	ASSAILLIR	... ..	assaillant
11	bake	106	... ..	... ..	<i>cuire</i> 9	cuisant
12	be	120	être ... ..	... ..	... ..	étant
13	be able	73	pouvoir ... ..	... ..	... ..	pouvant
14	beat	88	... ..	BATTRE 12	... ..	battant
15	be born	136	... ..	NAÎTRE 13	... ..	naissant
16	become	23	... ..	... ..	<i>devenir</i> 5	devenant
17	believe	104	croire ... ..	... ..	... ..	croyant 14
18	behave	93	... ..	... ..	<i>conduire</i> (se) 9	conduisant
19	belong	9	... ..	... ..	<i>appartenir</i> 1	appartenant
20	be necessary	69	falloir ... ..	... ..	... ..	—
20A	be silent	81	... ..	... ..	<i>se taire</i> 16	taisant (se)
21	be willing	81	vouloir ... ..	... ..	... ..	voulant
22	be worth	79	valoir ... ..	... ..	... ..	valant

‡ V. Notes at the end of this Table.

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
Principles.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imperfect.	Future. [Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
{ absous m. { absoute f. abstenu* reconnu acquis	absous abstiens (m')† reconnais acquiers† acquiers acquiert acquérons acquérez acquièrement	— abstins (m') reconnus acquis		abstiendrai (m') acquerrai	abstienne (m')† acquière† acquières acquière acquérons acquériez acquièrement	
admis	admits	admis				
convenu* permis prévenu 7 paru assailli cuit été	convien† permets prévien† parais 8 assaille cuis suis es est sommes êtes sont puist† peux peut pouvons pouvez peuvent	convins permis prévins parus assaillis cuisis fus		conviendrai préviendrai serai	convienne† préviennet sois sois soit soyons soyez soient puisse 11	to
pu	puis† peux peut pouvons pouvez peuvent	pus		pourrai		
battu né* devenu* cru conduit appartenu fallu tu* voulu	bats nais devien† crois† conduis appartiens† il faut tais (me) veux† veux veut voulons voulez veulent	battis naquis devins crus conduisis appartins il fallut tus [me] voulus		deviendrai appartiendrai il faudra voudrai	deviennet croiet appartiennet il faille veille† veilles veille voulions vouliez veuillent vaillet vailles vaille valions valiez vaillent	17
valu	vaux vaux vaut valons valez valent	valus		vaudrai		

* Compound Tenses with *être*.† The first and second persons plural of this tense are formed *regularly* from the Participle present.

IRREGULAR

Alphabetical order in English.	English Verbs.	Alphabetical order in French.	IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE			
			Present of the Infinitive.			Parti- Present.
			Principal Verbs. †	Model Verbs. †	Derivative Verbs. †	
	TO					
23	boil	12	bouillir 18 ...	... ..	... ..	bouillant
24	break	100	... ..	ROMPRE	... ..	rompant
25	clear (the table)	22	... ..	... ..	<i>desservir</i> 19 ...	desservant
26	clothe	65	... ..	VÊTIR	... ..	vêtant 20
27	collect	49	... ..	... ..	<i>recueillir</i> 21	recueillant
28	come	64	... ..	VENIR	... ..	venant
29	complain	144	... ..	... ..	<i>plaindre</i> (sc) 22	plaignant (se)
30	conceal (keep secret)	165	... ..	TAIRE	... ..	taisant
31	conclude	92	... ..	CONCLURE	... ..	concluant
32	concur	13	... ..	... ..	<i>concourir</i> 23 ...	concourant
33	conduct	93	... ..	CONDUIRE 24	... ..	conduisant
34	conquer	174	... ..	VAINCRE	... ..	vainquant
35	consecrate	11	bénir ...	... ..	... ..	bénissant
36	consent	15	... ..	... ..	<i>consentir</i> 26 ...	consentant
37	construct	97	... ..	... ..	<i>construire</i> 9 ...	construisant
38	contain	16	... ..	... ..	<i>contenir</i> 1 ...	contenant
39	contradict	93	... ..	CONTREDIRE 27	... ..	contredisant
40	converse (about..)	30	... ..	... ..	<i>entretenir</i> (s') 1	entretenant (s')
41	convince	100	... ..	... ..	<i>convaincre</i> 28	convainquant
42	cover	19	... ..	... ..	<i>couvrir</i> 29	couvrant
43	corrupt	101	... ..	... ..	<i>corrompre</i> 30	corrompant
44	curse (impre- cate evil)	132	maudire	... ..	... ..	maudissant
45	deduct	109	... ..	... ..	<i>déduire</i> 9	déduisant
46	deny	24	... ..	... ..	<i>disconvenir</i> 3	disconvenant
47	describe	108	... ..	... ..	<i>décrire</i> 31	décrivant
48	destroy	112	... ..	... ..	<i>détruire</i> 9	détruisant
49	die	35	mourir 13...	... ..	... ..	mourant
50	disappear	114	... ..	... ..	<i>disparaître</i> 2...	disparaissant
51	discourse	25	... ..	... ..	<i>discourir</i> 23 ...	discourant
52	discover	21	... ..	... ..	<i>découvrir</i> 29 ...	découvrant
53	displease	111	... ..	... ..	<i>déplaire</i> 32 ...	déplaissant

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
inciples.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imperfect.	Future. [Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
bouilli rompu	bous romps	bouillis rompis				
desservi vêtu	dessers vêtons vêtez vêtent	desservis vêtis				
recueilli venu*	recueille viens† viens vient venons venez viennent	recueillis vins		recueillerai viendra	viennet viennes vienne venions veniez viennent	
plaint*	plaints (me)	plaignis				
tu conclu concoure conduit vaincu	tais conclus concours conduis vains vaines vainc vainquons vainquez vainquent	tus conclus concoures conduisis vainquis		concourrai		
bénit 25 consenti construit contenu contredit	bénis consens construis contiens† contredis 27	bénis consentis construisis contins contredis		contiendrai	contienne†	
entretenu* convaincu couvert corrompu	entretiens (m') + convaincs couvre corromps	entretins (m') convainquis couvris corrompis		entretiendrai (m')	entretienne† (m')	
maudit dédit disconvenu dérît détruit mort*	maudis déduis disconviens* dérîs détruis meurs* meurs meurt mourons meurez meurent	maudis déduisis disconvins dérîvis détruisis mourus		disconviendrai	disconviennet*	
				mourrai	meure† meures meure mourions mouriez meurent	
disparu discouru découvert déplu	disparais discours découvre déplais	disparus discourus découvris déplu		discourrai		

IRREGULAR

Alphabetical order in English.	English Verbs.	Alphabetical order in French.	IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE						
			Present of the Infinitive.						Parti-
			Principal Verbs. †	Model Verbs. †	Derivative Verbs. †				Present.
	TO								
54	do	122	... ..	FAIRE	... ..				faisant 34
55	drink	89	boire ...	... ..	... ..				buvant
56	dye	170	... ..	... ..	... teindre 22				teignant
57	elect	116	... ..	... ..	... élire 36				élisant
58	exclude	121	... ..	... ..	... exclure 35				excluant
59	extinguish	119	... ..	... ..	... éteindre 22				éteignant
60	fall asleep	28	... ..	... ..	... endormir (s') 37				endormant (s')
61	fear	103	... ..	CRAINDRE	... ..				craignant
62	feel	56	... ..	SENTIR	... ..				sentant
63	feel (mentally)	51	... ..	... ..	... ressentir 26				ressentant
64	fetch	48	querir 38	... ..	... ..				_____
65	fight for	90	... ..	... ..	... combattre 39				combattant
66	follow	165	... ..	SUIVRE	... ..				suivant
67	foresee	75	prévoir	... ..	... ..				prévoyant 14
68	fry	124	frire 40	... ..	... ..				_____
69	gather	20	... ..	CUEILLIR	... ..				cueillant
70	go	1	... ..	ALLER	... ..				allant
71	go away	2	... ..	... ..	... aller (s'en) 42				allant
72	go out	58	... ..	... ..	... sortir 43				sortant
73	graze	139	... ..	... ..	... paître 2				paissant
74	grind (to pulverise)	135	... ..	MOUDRE	... ..				moulant
75	grind (to sharpen)	117	... ..	... ..	... émoudre 45				émoulant
76	grow	105	... ..	... ..	... croître 88				croissant
77	hate	134	haïr ...	... ..	... ..				haïssant

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
ciples.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imperfect.	[Future. Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
fait	fais fais fait faisons faites font	fis		ferai	fasse	
bu	bois† bois boit buvons buvez boivent	bus			boive† boives boive buvions buviez boivent	
teint élu exclu éteint endormi* craint senti	teins élis exclus éteins endorms (m') crains sens	teignis élus exclus éteignis endormis (m') craignis sentis				
ressenti	ressens	ressentis				
combattu suivi prévu frit	combats suis prévois fris fris frit	combattis suivis prévis		frirai	prévoie	40
cueilli allé*	cueille vais† vas va allons allez vont vais sors pâis 44	cueillis allai		cueillerai irai	aille† ailles aille allions alliez aillent aille	41
allé* sorti*		allai sortis		irai		42
moulu	mouds	moulus				
émoulu crû 46	émouds crois crois croît croissons croissez croissent	émoulus crûs				
hai	hais 47 hais hait	hais hais hait				

IRREGULAR

Alphabetical order in English.	English Verbs.	Alphabetical order in French.	IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE				
			Present of the Infinitive.			Parti-	
			Principal Verbs. ↓	Model Verbs. ↓	Derivative Verbs. ↓	Present.	
	TO						
78	have	67	avoir ... ..	...	...	ayant	
79	have a pre- sentiment	46	... ..	...	<i>pressentir</i> 26	pressentant	
80	hear	41	ouïr 51	...	...
81	hold	62	... ..	TENIR...	...	tenant	
82	hold one's tongue	169	... ..	...	<i>taire (se)</i> 16	taisant (se)	
83	incur	27	... ..	...	<i>encourir</i> 23	encourant	
84	injure (to wrong)	137	nuire ... ..	...	...	nuisant	
85	inscribe	125	... ..	...	<i>inscrire</i> 31	inscrivant	
86	instruct	126	... ..	...	<i>instruire</i> 9	instruisant	
87	interfere	35	... ..	...	<i>intervenir</i> 5	intervenant	
88	interrupt	127	... ..	...	<i>interrompre</i> 30	interrompant	
89	introduce	128	... ..	...	<i>introduire</i> 9	introduisant	
90	invest (with authority)	54	... ..	...	<i>revêtir</i> 52	revêtant	
91	join	129	... ..	...	<i>joindre</i> 22	joignant	
91A	keep	62	... ..	...	<i>tenir</i>	tenant	
92	know (persons)	96	... ..	CONNAÎTRE 53	...	connaissant	
93	know (things)	78	savoir 54	...	...	sachant	
94	laugh	159	... ..	RIRE ...	...	riant	
94A	lead	...	... ..	...	<i>conduire</i> 9	conduisant	
95	learn	86	... ..	...	<i>apprendre</i> 51	apprenant 53	
96	lie (buried)	33	gésir...	...	...	gisant	
97	lie	37	... ..	...	<i>mentir</i> 26	mentant	
98	live	174	... ..	VIVRE	...	vivant	
99	maintain	36	... ..	...	<i>maintenir</i> 1	maintenant	
	make	...	... ..	FAIRE	v. to do, No. 54		
100	make believe	84	accroire 62	...	...

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
inciples.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imperfect.	Future. [Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
eu	haïssons haïssez haïssent ai as a avons avez ont	haïmes haïtes haïrent eus eus eut eûmes eûtes eurent	48	aurai auras aura aurons aurez auront	aie 49 aies ait ayons ayez aient	50
pressenti	pressens	pressentis				
ouï						
tenu	tiens† tiens tient tenons tenez tiennent	tins tins tint tinmes tintes tinrent		tiendrai	tiennet† tiennes tienne tenions teniez tiennent	
tu* encouru	tais (me) encours	tus (me) encourus		encourrai		
nui inscrit instruit intervenu* interrompu introduit	nuis inscris instruis interviens† interromps introduis	nuisis inscrivis instruisis intervins interrompis introduisis		interviendrai	intervienne†	
revêtu joint tenu	revêts joins tiens†	revêtis joignis tins		... ..	tiennet†	
connu su	connais sais sais sait savons savez savent ris conduis apprends† ci-gît 59 ci-gisent 60	connus sus sus sut sûmes sûtes surent ris conduisis appris	55	saurai sauras saura saurons sauront		56
ri conduit appris					apprennet†	
menti vécu maintenu		mentis vécus maintins	61			
				maintiendrai	maintienne†	

IRREGULAR

Alphabetical order in English.	English Verbs.	Alphabetical order in French.	IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE					Parti-	
			Present of the Infinitive.						Present.
			Principal Verbs. ↓	Model Verbs. ↓	Derivative Verbs. ↓				
	TO								
101	mimic	99	... ..	...	...	<i>contrefaire</i> 63	contrefaisant 34	
102	move	70	... ..	MOUVOIR	...	... ..	mouvant	
103	obtain	39	... ..	...	...	<i>obtenir</i> 1	obtenant	
104	offer	40	... ..	...	...	<i>offrir</i> 29	offrant	
105	omit	138	... ..	...	...	<i>omettre</i> 4	omettant	
106	open	42	... ..	OUVRIR	...	... ..	ouvrant	
107	paint	141	... ..	...	...	<i>peindre</i> 22	peignant 64	
108	pity	143	... ..	...	...	<i>plaindre</i> 22	plaignant 67	
109	please	145	... ..	...	...	<i>plaire</i> 16	plaisant	
110	predict	147	... ..	...	...	<i>prédire</i> 65	prédisant	
111	prescribe	149	... ..	...	...	<i>prescrire</i> 31	prescrivant	
112	preserve	95	... ..	...	...	<i>confire</i> 65	confisant	
113	pretend (to affect)	123	... ..	...	...	<i>feindre</i> 22	feignant	
114	prevail	74	prévaloir	...	...	... ..	prévalant	
115	produce	150	... ..	...	...	<i>produire</i> 9	produisant	
116	promote	76	...	...	...	<i>promouvoir</i> 68	—	
117	provide	72	pourvoir	...	...	... ..	pourvoyant 14	
118	pull down	82	... ..	...	...	<i>abattre</i> 39	abattant	
119	pursue	146	... ..	...	...	<i>poursuivre</i> 69	poursuivant	
120	put	134	... ..	METTRE 70	...	... ..	mettant	
121	rain	71	pleuvoir	...	...	... ..	pleuvant	
122	reach	87	... ..	...	...	<i>atteindre</i> 22	atteignant	
123	read	130	... ..	LIRE	...	... ..	lisant	
124	read again	156	... ..	...	...	<i>relire</i> 36	relisant	
125	recollect	52	... ..	...	...	<i>ressouvenir</i> (se) 5	ressouvenant (se)	
126	reduce	155	... ..	...	...	<i>réduire</i> 9	réduisant	
127	remember	61	... ..	...	...	<i>souvenir</i> (se) 5	souvenant (se)	
128	repent	50	... ..	...	...	<i>repentir</i> (se) 26	repentant (se)	
129	resolve	158	résoudre	...	...	... ..	résolvant (se)	
130	revive	157	... ..	...	...	<i>renaître</i> 72	renaissant	
131	run	18	... ..	COURIR	...	... ..	courant	
132	to run away	29	... ..	...	...	<i>enfuir</i> (s') 73	enfuyant (s') 14	

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
ciples.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imperfect.	Future. [Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
contrefait mu	contrefais meus † meus meut mouvons mouvez meuvent	contrefis mus		contreferai mouvrai	contrefasse meuve † meuves meuve mouvions mouviez meuvent obtienne †	
obtenu offert omis ouvert peint plaint plu	obtiens † offre omets ouvre peins plains plais plais plait plaisons plaisez plaisent	obtins offrir omis ouvris peignis plaignis plus		obtiendrai		
prédit prescrit confit	prédis prescris confis	prédis prescrivis confis		... ..	... ..	89
feint prévalu	feins prévaux prévaux prévaut prévalons prevalez prévalent	feignis prévalus		prévaudrai	66	—
produit promu pourvu abattu poursuivi mis plu atteint lu relu ressouvenu*	produis pourvois † abats poursuis mets il pleut atteins lis relis ressouviens (me) †	produisis pourvus abattis poursuivis mis il plut atteignis lus relus ressouvins (me)				
réduit souvenu*	réduis souviens (me) †	réduisis souvins (me)		ressouviendrai (me)	ressouvienn (me) †	
repenti*	repens (me)	repentis (me)		souviendrai (me)	souvienn (me) †	
résolu résous 71	résous	résolus				
couru enfui*	renais cours enfuis (m') †	renais cours enfuis (m')		courrai	enfuit †	

IRREGULAR

Alphabetical order in English.	English Verbs.	Alphabetical order in French.	IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE				
			Present of the Infinitive.			Parti-	
			Principal Verbs. ↓	Model Verbs. ↓	Derivative Verbs. ↓	Present.	
	TO						
133	to run over (in travelling)	43	... ..	... ..	... <i>parcourir</i> 23...	parcourant	
134	to run to	6	... ..	... ..	... <i>accourir</i> 23 ...	accourant	
135	satisfy	161	... ..	... ..	... <i>satisfaire</i> 63	satisfaisant 34	
136	say	113	... ..	DIRE ...	... ..	disant	
137	say again	154	... ..	... ..	... <i>redire</i> 74 ...	redisant	
138	see	80	... ..	VOIR ...	... ..	voyant 14	
139	see again	77	... ..	... ..	... <i>revoir</i> 76 ...	revoyant 14	
140	see any one	151	... ..	... ..	... <i>reconduire</i> 9 ...	reconduisant	
141	out send	3	... ..	ENVOYER	... ..	envoyant 78	
142	{ send away }	4	... ..	... ..	... <i>renvoyer</i> ...	renvoyant 78	
143	{ send back } serve	57	... ..	SERVIR	... ..	servant	
144	set out	102	... ..	... ..	... <i>partir</i> 43 ...	partant	
145	sew	131	coudre	... ..	... ..	cousant	
146	shine	32	luire	... ..	... ..	luisant	
	shun		... ..	FUIR ...	... ..	fuyant 14	
147	sit down	66	asseoir (s') 80	... ..	... ..	asseyant (s')	
148	slander	133	... ..	... ..	... <i>médire</i> 65 ...	médisant	

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
Principles.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imperfect.	Future. [Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
parcouru accouru satisfait dit	parcours accours satisfais dis dis dit disons dites disent redis vois vois voit voyons voyez voient revois	parcourus accourus satisfis dis		parcourrai accourrai satisfèrai	satisfasse	
redit vu	vois voit voyons voyez voient revois	redis vis 75		verrai	voie	89
revu	voient revois	revis 77		reverrai	revoie	
reconduit envoyé	reconduis envoie envoies envoie envoyons envoyez envoient	reconduisis envoyai		enverrai	envoie	
renvoyé servi	renvoie sers sers sert servons servez servent	renvoyai servis		renverrai	renvoie	
parti cousu lui fui	pars couds luis fuis fuis fuit fuyons fuyez fuient	partis cousis fuis fuis fuit fuîmes fûtes fuirent			fuie	
assis	assieds (m') assieds assied asseyons asseyez asseient	assis (m')		assièrai (m')		
médit	médise	médise				89

IRREGULAR

		IRREGULAR PRIMITIVE											
Alphabetical order in English.		English Verbs.		Alphabetical order in French.		Present of the Infinitive.					Parti-		
						Principal Verbs. ↓		Model Verbs. ↓		Derivative Verbs. ↓		Present.	
		TO											
149	sleep	26	...	...	...	DORMIR		...	...	...	...	dormant	
150	smell	...	...	...	...					sentir 26			
151	smile	162	...	...	...					sourire 81		souriant	
151	start	63	...	...	...					tressaillir 82		tressaillant	
152	start (set out)	44	...	...	...	PARTIR						partant	
153	stir up	68	...	...	...					émouvoir 68		émouvant	
154	strike (a blow)	31	férir	82a	...								
155	struggle	107	...	...	...					débattre (se) 39		débattant (se)	
156	subdue	14	...	...	...					conquérir 83		conquérant 3	
157	subscribe	163	...	...	...					souscrire 31		souscrivant	
158	succeed	43	...	...	...					parvenir 5		parvenant	
159	succour	55	...	...	...					secourir 23		secourant	
160	suffice	164	suffire	...	...							suffisant	
161	suffer	59	...	...	...					souffrir 29		souffrant	
161	suit	17	...	...	...					convenir 84			
162	support	60	...	...	...					soutenir 1		soutenant	
163	surprise	166	...	...	...					surprendre 57		surprenant 58	
164	survive	167	...	...	...					survivre 85		survivant	
165	take	148	...	...	...	PRENDRE						prenant 58	
166	tell	...	...	...	...					dire 86			
167	translate	171	...	...	...					traduire 9		traduisant	
168	undertake	118	...	...	...					entreprendre 57		entreprenant 58	
169	understand	91	...	...	...					comprendre 57		comprenant 58	
169	undo	110	...	...	...					défaire 63		défaisant	
170	welcome	7	...	...	...					accueillir 21		accueillant	
171	withhold	53	...	...	...					retenir 1		retenant	
172	write	115	...	...	...	ÉCRIRE						écrivant	
173	write again	153	...	...	...					récrire 31		récrivant	
174	write out	172	...	...	...					transcrire 31		transcrivant	

NOTES TO IRREGULAR VERBS.

1. Like *Tenir* (81).—2. Like *Connaitre* (92).—The *i* occurs 14 times when followed by *t*.—3. The *i* changes 7 times into *è* before *e* mute.—4. Like *mettre* (120).—5. Like *venir* (28).—6. Governs the Dative with Persons.—7. *Etre prévenu en faveur de* [to be prepossessed in favour of].—8. *Je parais* [I appear], *Je parais* [I adorned, I parried], from *paraître*.—9. Like *conduire* 33.—10. Imperative: *sois*, qu'il soit, *soyons*, *soyez*, qu'ils soient. *Être* and *avoir* are the only two Verbs which do not end with *e*, *es*, *t*, *ions*, *iez*, *ent*, in the Present of the Subjunctive. Cp. *Je serai* [I shall be] and *Je serrai* [I clasped] from *serrer*. 11. Cp. *Que je puise* [I draw water, I derive] from *puiser*.—12. *Se battre* [to fight].—13. Takes 14 times *t* before *t*.—14 Changes 7 times *y* into *ï* before *e* mute.—15. Imperfect: *il fallait*.—16. Like

VERBS.

TENSES.			Irregular Derivative Tenses.			
ciples.	Present of the Indicative.	Past Definite.	Imper- fect.	Future. [Present of the Conditional.]	Present of the Subjunctive.	Imperative.
Past.						
dormi	dors dors dort dormons dormez dorment	dormis				
souri tressailli parti* ému	souris tressaille pars ému†	souris tressaillis partis ému†			émeuv†	
débatu* conquis souscrit parvenu* secouru suffi souffert	débats (me) conquier† souscris parvien† secours suffis souffre	débat† (me) conquis souscris parvins secourus suffis souffris		conquerrai parviendrai secourrai	conquière† parvienn†	
soutenu surpris survécu pris	soutien† surprend† survis prend† prends prenons prenez prennent	soutins surpris survécus pris		soutiendrai	soutienn† surpren† pren† prennes prenne prenions prenez prennent	
traduit entrepris compris défais accueilli retiens écrit récrit transcrit	traduis entreprend† comprend† défais accueille retien† écrit récrit transcrit	traduisis entrepris compris défis accueillis retins écrivis récrivis transcrivis		déferai accueillerai 87	entrepren† comprend† défasse retienn†	

faire (30).—17. *Imperative*: veux, voulons, voulez. *Veuillez* is frequently used in the sense of *Have the kindness to*.—18. Generally used in the Infinitive preceded by *faire*: elle fait bouillir des œufs 'She is boiling eggs'.—19. Like *servir* (163).—20. *Vétissant* and *je vétissais* were formerly used.—21. Like *cueillir* (62). 22. Like *craindre* (61). *Plaindre* 'to pity'.—23. Like *convenir* (111). Cp. *je convenais* [Imperfect] and *je concourrais* [Cond. Pres.].—24. *Se conduire* 'to behave'.—25. *Bénir* 'to bless' being regular, its Participle past is *béni*.—26. Like *Sentir* (52).—27. Differs from *dire* (136) only in the second person plural of the Present Indicative, but not in the Imperative. It makes *vous contredisez*.—28. Like *vaincre* (34).—29. Like *mourir* (154).—30. Like *rompre* (34).—31. Like *revivre* (172).—32. Like *taire* (30).—33. Cp. *Je mourais* [Imperf.] and *je mourrais* [Cond. Pres.].—34. The first syllable

in *faisant, faisons*, and all the persons in the Imperfect, is pronounced *fe*. 35. Like *conclure* (31).—36. Like *lire* (123).—37. Like *dormir* (149).—38. Used only in the Infinitive after *aller, envoyer, venir*: *J'enverrai quérir vos livres* [I shall send for your books].—39. Like *battre* (14).—40. Used with *faire*. Cp. Note 18. It has only the second person singular in the Imperative.—41. *Imperative*: *Va*, qu'il aille, allons, allez, qu'ils aillent. *Aller* is not to be used without an Objective: *Je m'en vais* [I am going], or *je pars*.—42. Like *aller* (70). *Imperative*: *Va-t'en*, qu'il s'en aille, allons-nous-en, allez-vous-en, qu'ils s'en aillent. The *t* in the second person singular is not euphonic, but means *toi*.—43. Like *partir* (152). *Etre sorti* [to have gone out]; *avoir sorti* [to have taken out].—44. Defective, and without compound tenses.—45. Like *moudre* (74).—46. Takes 16 times *i* and 13 times *u*.—47. Irregular only in the first three persons singular of the Present and second person singular of the Imperative.—48. One of the two Verbs whose Imperfect is not formed from the Participle Present. *Imperfect*: *j'avais*, tu avais, il avait, nous avions, vous aviez, ils avaient.—49. The Subjunctive Present of all French Verbs ends in *e, es, e, ions, iez, ent*, except *avoir* and *être*.—50. *Imperative*: *aie*, qu'il ait, ayons, ayez, qu'ils aient.—51. *Je t'ai ouï dire* [I heard people say so].—52. Like *vêtir* (26).—53. Germ., *kennen*.—54. Germ., *wissen*.—55. One of the two Verbs whose Imperfect is not formed from the Participle Present. *Imperfect*: *je savais*, tu savais, il savait, nous savions, vous saviez, ils savaient.—56. *Imperative*: *Sache*, qu'il sache, sachez, qu'ils sachent.—57. Like *prendre* (165).—58. The medial *n* of the Participle Present is doubled before the 7 terminations which begin with *e, es, or ent*. 59. *Ci-gît* [Here lieth].—60. The *s* is sounded like *ss*.—61. *Imperfect*: *je gisais*.—62. Like *faire* [to do] (54). 62. Used only in the Infinitive after *faire*: *Il m'a fait accroire que...* [he has made me believe that]. *En faire accroire à* [to impose upon any one].—63. Like *faire* (54).—64. *Peignant, je peignais, que je peigne* from *peigner* [to comb].—65. Like *contredire* (39).—66. Differs from *valoir* (22) in the Subjunctive Present only. 67. *Se plaindre* [to complain].—68. Like *mouvoir* (102). Scarcely ever used except in the Infinitive and Participle Past.—69. Like *suivre* (66).—70. Also means *to dress*: *elle est toujours bien mise* [she is always well dressed].—71. *Résolu* [resolved]; *résous* [changed into, converted into].—72. Like *naitre* (15).—73. Like *fuir* (146).—74. Like *dire* (136).—75. Cp. *je vis* [I saw] and *je vis* [I live] (98).—76. Like *voir* (138).—77. Cp. *je revis* [I saw again] and *je revis* [I live over again].—78. Change the *y* into *i* eleven times before *e, es, or ent*.—79. Like *envoyer* (141).—80. *Se rasseoir* [to sit down again]. *Assoyant, j'assois, je m'assoierai, je m'asseyerai, que je m'assoie*, are also occasionally used.—81. Like *rire* (94).—82. Like *assaillir* (10).—82a. Used only in the Infinitive: *sans coup férir* [without striking a blow].—83. Like *acquérir* (4).—84. Like *venir* (28).—85. Like *vivre* (98). It governs the Dative.—86. Like *dire* [to say] (136).—87. The terminations of the Future and the Cond. Pres. of *cueillir* and its derivatives are identical with those of *parler*.—88. Preserves the circumflex accent in *je crois, tu crois, il croit; je crûs, tu crûs, il crût, ils crûrent, que je crûsse*, etc., and *crû*, to distinguish it from *croire* [to believe]. This accent appears 30 times in the Verb.—89. *Confire* makes *confisez*, in the Indicative and Imperative. *Contredire, médire, prédire*, make *contredisez, médisez, prédissez* in the Imperative. Only *redire* [to say again] is conjugated exactly like *dire* [to say] (136).—90. The second person plural of the Imperative is *confisez*.

REPETITION OF VERBS.

61. When a certain number of Verbs have been learnt, the teacher may give out or write out on the blackboard, various English Verbs to be written out or repeated in French in class, a different verb to be used for each person.

<p>jette (a) rappelles (b) emploie (c) jugeons (d) pincez (e) achètent (a)</p>	<p>naissais vainquais jetait rappelions employiez jugeaient</p>	<p>reçus (f) achetas naquit vainquimes jetâtes rappelèrent</p>	<p>emploierai jugeras pincera achèterons naitrez vaincrons</p>	<p>jetterais rappellerais emploierait jugerions pinceriez achèteraient</p>
<p>naisse vainque jette rappelions employiez jugent</p>	<p>pinçasse achetasses naquit vainquissions jetassiez rappelassent</p>	<p>emploie juge pinçons achetez naissent</p>	<p>vaincre jeter</p>	<p>rappelant employé</p>

(a) All verbs in *ETER*, double the *t* before each of the 23 terminations beginning with *e* mute. Except : *acheter*, to buy ; *bequeter*, to peck ; *colleter*, to collar ; *décolleter*, to bare the neck and shoulders ; *épousseter*, to dust ; *étiqueter*, to label ; *racheter*, to redeem, which take *é* in their penultimate syllable, before the same endings. Those in *éter*, such as *répéter*, to repeat, follow the same rule.

(b) All those in *ELER*, double the *l* before the 23 endings beginning with *e* mute. Except : *bourreler*, to goad ; *céler*, to conceal ; *déceler*, to disclose ; *dégeler*, to thaw ; *écarteler*, to quarter ; *geler*, to freeze ; *harceler*, to harass ; *marteler*, to hammer ; *modeler*, to model ; *peler*, to peel, which take *é* immediately before the 23 endings, beginning with *e* mute. Those in *eler*, as *révéler*, to reveal, follow the same rule.

(c) With the exception of verbs in *AYER*, such as *payer*, all verbs in *EVER*, *OVER*, *YVER*, change the *y* into *i* before the 23 endings beginning with *e* mute.

(d) All verbs in *GER* require the insertion of an additional *e* between the root of the verb and the 18 terminations beginning with *a* or *o*. In addition to this irregularity, those ending in *ÉGER*, such as *abrégér*, also change the *é* into *e* before the 23 endings which begin with *e* mute.

(e) All verbs in *CER* are written with *ç* before the 18 endings beginning with *a* or *o*.

(f) Verbs in *LEVOIR* take a cedilla under the *ç* before the 24 endings which begin with *o* or *u*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

NOTE.—No mention is made in Paradigm No. 1 of the *Principal* and of the *Subordinate Clauses*, because almost every word that enters into the composition of the former can also form part of the latter.

The *Principal Clause* extends up to Col. 17, and after the addition of *que* or some other word, which usually separates the *Principal Clause* from the *Subordinate Clause*, a repetition of any of the seventeen columns takes place.

I wish you had mentioned it to us before.

JE VOUDRAIS que vous nous en eussiez parlé auparavant.

1 9 8 1 3 7 8 13 17

Do you think that they can injure you ?

PENSEZ-VOUS qu'ils puissent vous nuire ?

9 1 1 8 3 16

It would have been impossible to believe that they should not yet have attended to it.

IL ÉTÉ ÉTÉ IMPOSSIBLE DE CROIRE qu'ils ne s'en fussent pas encore occupés.

1 8 13 17 1 2 4 7 8 10 11 13

62. The Subjunctive Mood is generally preceded by the conjunction *que*, and is used in the Subordinate Clause :

(i.) When the verb in the *Principal Clause* implies doubt, fear, uncertainty, volition, desire, surprise, grief, joy, and other mental affections.

(ii.) When the *Principal Clause* contains a purely interrogative and negative expression, implying doubt.

(iii.) When the *Principal Clause* contains a dubitative Impersonal Verb.

(iv.) In both Clauses, after the following *Particles* and *Conjunctive expressions* :

Although, bien que, encore que, quoique ; *before*, avant que ; *for fear that*, *of*, de crainte que ; *instead*, bien que ; *it is enough for*, c'est assez pour—que ; *it is not*, non que ; *supposing*, supposant que, si tant est que ; *unless*, à moins que, ne, si ce n'est que ; *until*, jusqu'à ce que, en attendant que ; *however* [adj.], que ne ; *however* [adv.], pour peu que, si peu que ; *in case*, au cas que, en cas que ; *it suffices*, c'est assez que ; *lest*, de peur que ; *not that*, ce n'est pas que, non pas que ; *notwithstanding*, nonobstant que ; *provided*, pourvu que ; *so as to*, pour que ; *usually preceded by assez or trop* ; *so that*, en sorte que ; *whereas*, *where*, où que ; *whether*, soit que ; *without*, sans que.

(v.) When for the sake of conciseness or for the purpose of avoiding the repetition of any of the following conjunctions in the sentence, the word *que* alone is used instead of : *although*, *before*, *for fear*, *if*, *in order*, *lest*, *so that*, *supposing*, *unless*, *until*, *whether*.

(vi.) After the following *Relative* and *Personal Pronouns*, and *Adverbs* : *To whom*, of which, whose [dubitative], dont, de qui ; *however* [followed by an adjective], quelque que, si que ; *however* [followed by an adverb], quelque que ; *in which* [dubitative], où ; *whatever* [followed by a noun], quel que, quelle que, quels que, quelles que ; *whatever* [followed by an ad. and noun], quelque que ; *whatever*, quel que ; *whatever* [thing], quel que ce soit que ; *whichever*, quel que, quel que ce soit que ; *where* [dubitative], où ; *which* [dubitative], que [Accus.], *who* [dubitative], qui [Nom.] ; *whichever*, qui que ce soit qui ; *whom* [dubitative], que ; *whomsoever*, qui que ce soit qui ; *whose* [dubitative] dont, de qui.

(vii.) After the *Superlative relative*, provided doubt or uncertainty exists in the mind of the speaker: *the first*, le premier; *the last*, le dernier; *the best*, le meilleur [adj.]; *the least*, le moindre [adj.]; *the worst*, le pis [adj.]; *the best*, le mieux [adv.]; *the least*, le moins [adv.]; *the worst*, le pis [adv.]; *the only*, le seul; *the most*, le plus.

(viii.) After *exclamations*, such as: *God forbid that*, à Dieu ne plaise que; *God grant that*, Dieu fasse que; *may God grant that*, Dieu veuille que; *would to God that*, plutôt à Dieu que; *would to Heaven that*, fasse le Ciel que; *God help me if*, me préservent les dieux que.

(ix.) In replies, implying *wish* or *concession*: *Would it were so!* Dieu le veuille! *hang the rogue!* au diable soit le voleur!—*well, be it so!* soit, eh bien, soit; *I wish you joy!* grand bien vous fasse! *Amen*, ainsi soit-il.

No. 4.—Paradigm illustrating the Relation between and those of the French

		Tenses of the English Verb.		
MOODS.		TENSES.		ILLUSTRATIONS.
		PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	
INDICATIVE.	Present	...	...	We doubt whether HE KNOWS it.
		...	...	Do you think HE IS MAKING progress?
		...	...	It is possible that SHE DOES KNOW them.
	Present Perfect..	...	...	I am afraid HE HAS SAID so.
		...	...	He does not believe that SHE HAS BEEN WRITING to you.
		...	...	I did not suppose that THEY LIVED in London.
	Imperfect...	...	...	I did not think HE WAS WAITING for me.
		...	...	We are not sure that HE DID GO OUT.
		...	...	However powerful THEY HAD BEEN.
	Pluperfect	...	...	I was not aware that THEY HAD BEEN WRITING to each other.
POTENTIAL.	Past	...	...	She did not think HE KNEW me.
		...	...	We waited until SHE HAD GONE.
		...	...	Did you think WE HAD BEEN ENJOYING OURSELVES?
	Past Perfect	...	...	I am afraid IT WILL RAIN to-morrow.
		...	...	But YOU SHALL ANSWER him.
		...	...	It is not likely that THEY WILL BE GOING OUT.
	Future	...	...	I do not fancy HE WILL HAVE ARRIVED.
		...	...	Do you expect THEY WILL HAVE BEEN COMPLAINING of them?
		...	...	THEY MAY FORGET all about it.
	Present	...	...	We doubt if THEY CAN READ this note.
		...	...	YOU MUST NOT THINK of it any more.
		...	...	SHE MAY HAVE ASKED me for them.
	Present Perfect..	...	...	THEY MUST HAVE RECEIVED my presents.
		...	...	He does not go out for fear HE MIGHT CATCH COLD.
		...	...	I shall keep it in case THEY SHOULD BE ASKING FOR IT.
	Past	...	...	It is just possible that HE WOULD HAVE EATEN them all.
		...	...	THEY MIGHT HAVE BEEN THINKING so.
		

63. There are Five Tenses in the *Subjunctive Mood*.

1. Present	<i>I am afraid he is dying.</i>	} Je crains qu'il ne MEURE.
2. Future	<i>I am afraid he will die.</i>	
3. Imperfect	<i>I was afraid he was dying.</i>	
4. Preterite	<i>I am afraid he is dead.</i>	
5. Pluperfect	<i>I was afraid he would have died.</i>	
		Je craignais qu'il ne MOURÛT.
		Je crains qu'il ne SOIT MORT.
		Je craignais qu'il ne FÛT MORT.

By means of these Tenses, all the Primary and Secondary Tenses of the English verb, whenever they are in the Subordinate Clause, and are required to be in the Subjunctive Mood in French, can be rendered, as will be seen from the accompanying Paradigm.

the Primary and Secondary Tenses of the English Verb
Subjunctive Mood.

French Subjunctive Mood.		ILLUSTRATED ON THE SEQUENCE OF TENSES. †	
EQUIVALENTS IN FRENCH.			
* Nous doutons QU'IL le SACHE. ... ..	...	I	1
Pensez-vous QU'IL FASSE des progrès? ... ..	...	I	1
Il est possible QU'ELLE les CONNAISSE. ... ..	...	I	1
Je crains QU'IL ne l'AIT DIT. ... ..	...	I	4
Il ne croit pas QU'ELLE vous AIT ÉCRIT. ... ..	...	I	4
Je ne supposai pas QU'ILS DEMEURASSENT à Londres. ... ..	...	V	3
Je ne croyais pas QU'IL m'ATTENDÎT. ... ..	...	III	3
Nous ne sommes pas sûrs QU'IL SOIT SORTI. ... ..	...	I	4
Quelque puissants QU'ILS EUSSENT ÉTÉ. ... ..	...	
* J'ignorais QU'ELLES se FUSSENT ÉCRIT. ... ..	...	III	5
Elle ne pensait pas QU'IL me CONNÛT. ... ..	...	III	3
Nous attendimes QU'ELLE FÛT PARTIE. ... ..	...	V	5
Pensiez-vous QUE NOUS nous FUSSIONS AMUSÉES? ... ..	...	III	5
Je crains QU'IL ne PLEUVE demain. ... ..	...	I	2
J'insiste POUR QUE VOUS lui RÉPONDIEZ. ... ..	...	I	1
Il n'est pas probable QU'ILS SORTENT. ... ..	...	I	2
Je ne soupçonne pas QU'IL SOIT ARRIVÉ. ... ..	...	I	4
Vous attendez-vous à ce QU'ELLES se SOIENT PLAINTES d'eux? ... ..	...	I	4
* Il se peut QU'ILS FOUBLIENT. ... ..	...	I	2
* Nous doutons QU'ILS SACHENT lire ce billet. ... ..	...	I	1
* Il est essentiel QUE VOUS n'y SONGIEZ plus. ... ..	...	I	2
* Il est probable QU'ELLE me les AIT DEMANDÉS. ... ..	...	I	4
* Il faut QU'ELLES AIENT REÇU mes cadeaux. ... ..	...	I	4
* Il ne sort pas, de peur QU'IL ne S'ENRHUME. ... ..	...	
* Je le retiendrai, en cas QU'ILS me le DEMANDENT. ... ..	...	
* Il est bien possible QU'IL les EÛT MANGÉES toutes. ... ..	...	I	5
* Il se pourrait QU'ILS EUSSENT PENSÉ cela. ... ..	...	IX	5

† NOTE.—The figures given in this column refer to the Paradigm on the Sequence of Tenses, which is given hereafter. * V. R. 65.

Tenses of the English Verb.			
MOODS.	TENSES.		ILLUSTRATIONS.
	PRIMARY.	SECONDARY.	
SUBJUNCTIVE.	Present ...	... .. Present Perfect..	He does not reply, although I WRITE to him. I shall see them, provided THEY ARE INTRO- DUCED to me.
	Past ...	... .. Past Perfect ...	She did not succeed, though SHE WAS so diligent. IF HE HAD KNOWN you, he would have done it.
	Future ...	... .. Future Perfect..	We shall go IF HE WRITE to us. She asks for it, lest YOU SHOULD HAVE FOR- GOTTEN it.
	Hypothetical.	... ..	WERE YOU TO DEPRIVE me of my rights!
INFINITIVE.	Present ...	... .. ... .. Perfect ...	I want you TO MENTION it to them. He is not likely TO BE TRAVELLING now. They do not believe THAT THEY HAVE IN- VITED her.
	Participle Incomplete	... .. Participle Complete ...	I do not think THEY HAVE BEEN SINGING. We are vexed at your SAYING so.
			She regrets your HAVING MISUNDERSTOOD her.

ON THE SEQUENCE OF TENSES.

64. All Tenses in the *Indicative*, *Conditional*, *Imperative*, and *Infinitive* Moods in the Principal Clause, correspond in the Subordinate Clause with one of the five Tenses of the *Subjunctive Mood*.

65. Many of the French Verbs given hereafter are often followed by another Mood, and the sentences on the Paradigm in which some of them are found, as well as the Infinitives heading the accompanying rules, are preceded by an asterisk (*).

<i>We doubt whether he knows it.</i>	{	Nous DOUTONS qu'il le <i>sache</i> (Subj.).
	{	Nous DOUTONS s'il le <i>sait</i> (Indic.).
<i>They may forget all about it</i>	{	Il SE PEUT qu'ils l' <i>oublie</i> nt (Subj.).
	{	Ils PEUVENT l' <i>oublier</i> (Infin.).
<i>You must not think of it any more.</i>	{	Il EST ESSENTIEL que vous n'y <i>songiez</i> plus (Subj.).
	{	Il ne FAUT plus y <i>songer</i> (Infin.).
<i>Were you to deprive me of my rights.</i>	{	DUSSIEZ-vous me priver de mes droits (Subj.).
	{	Quand même vous DEVRIEZ me <i>priver</i> de mes droits (Cond.).

The Table of Sequences [V. page 58], shews the manner in which their accordance takes place; viz., the Tense of the Subjunctive Mood which is to be used after the Simple and Compound Tenses of other Moods.

French Subjunctive Mood.	ILLUSTRATED ON THE SEQUENCE OF TENSES.
EQUIVALENTS IN FRENCH.	
QUOIQUE JE lui ÉCRIVE, il ne me répond pas. ... Je les recevrai, pourvu QU'ILS me SOIENT PRÉSENTÉS. ...	
Elle n'a pas réussi, quoiqu'ELLE FÛT si assidue.	
*S'IL vous EÛT CONNUES, il l'aurait fait.	
*Nous irons, pourvu QU'IL nous ÉCRIVE.	
Elle le demande, de peur QUE VOUS ne l'AYEZ OUBLIÉ. ...	
DUSSIEZ-VOUS me priver de mes droits !	
*Je désire ... } *Je veux ... } QUE VOUS leur en PARLIEZ.	I 2
J'insiste pour	
Il est peu probable QU'IL VOYAGE en ce moment.	I 1
Ils ne croient pas QU'ELLES l'AIENT INVITÉE.	I 4
*Je ne pense pas QU'ILS AIENT CHANTÉ.	I 4
*Nous regrettons QUE VOUS DISIEZ cela.	I 1
*Elle est fâchée QUE VOUS l'AYEZ mal COMPRISE.	I 4

VERBS WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

66. Admit (to), *Admettre, prendre.

We admit that such is the case.

Let us admit that it was not mentioned to him.

Nous ADMETTONS qu'il en soit ainsi.
PRENONS que nous ne lui en ayons rien dit.

Prendre is used in this sense only in the second and third persons plural of the Imperative.

67. Affirm (to), [negatively], *Ne pas affirmer.

I would not affirm that they said so.

Je N'AFFIRMERAI PAS qu'ils eussent dit cela.

68. Agree (to), *Convenir.

We agreed that it should be done forthwith.

Nous CONVÎNÂMES que cela fût fait au plus tôt.

69. Allow (to), Permettre, souffrir [negatively].

Allow me to tell you the truth.

I shall not allow them to be hurt.

PERMETTEZ que je vous dise la vérité.
Je NE SOUFFRIRAI PAS qu'on leur fasse du mal.

70. Appear (to), [impersonal], *Il paraît [negatively].

That system does not appear to have been defined.

Il NE PARAÎT PAS qu'on ait défini ce système.

71. Apprehend (to), **Appréhender que...ne.*

He apprehends a relapse.

IL APPRÉHENDÉ que sa maladie ne revienne.

A negative in the Principal Clause excludes *ne* from the Subordinate :

We do not apprehend their asking for it.

NOUS N'APPRÉHENDONS PAS qu'ils le demandent.

72. Approve (to), [negatively], *Approuver.*

She did not approve of our going alone.

Elle n'APPROUVA pas que nous y allassions seuls.

73. Ask (to), **Demander.*

I did not ask to be served first.

Je n'AI pas DEMANDÉ qu'on me servît avant les autres.

He insists on his orders being obeyed.

IL DEMANDE qu'on fasse ce qu'il ordonne.

74. Assert (to), [negatively], }

75. Assure (to), [negatively], }

Ne pas assurer.

I should not assert that he said so.

Je N'ASSURERAI PAS qu'il eût dit cela.

76. Attend (to), *Voir à ce que.* [Like TO SEE.]77. Avoid (to), **Éviter que...ne.*

To avoid their being compelled to answer you.

Pour ÉVITER qu'ils ne fussent forcés de vous répondre.

I shall avoid her speaking to me about it.

J'ÉVITERAI qu'elle ne m'en parle.

78. Be (to), [used as an Impersonal Verb], *Être, etc.*

Is it ? [preceded by *How*], *Se fait-il que...?*

How is it that the news did not reach them?

{ Comment SE FAIT-IL } qu'ils n'aient pas reçu la nouvelle?

79. Is it a fact ? *Se confirme-t-il que...?*

Is it a fact that they were shot?

SE CONFIRME-T-IL qu'ils aient été fusillés?

80. It is a good thing, **Il est bon.*

It is a good thing to have been informed of it.

IL EST BON qu'on nous en ait informés.

81. It is a pity, **C'est dommage, il est fâcheux que.*

It is a pity you lost that dog.

C'EST DOMMAGE que vous ayez perdu ce chien-là.

What a pity it is raining!

QUEL DOMMAGE qu'il pleuve!

It is a pity you did not see her.

IL EST FÂCHEUX que vous ne l'ayez pas vue.

82. It is astonishing, **Il est étonnant.*

It is astonishing that they know it.

IL EST ÉTONNANT qu'on le sache.

83. It is becoming [negatively or interrogatively], { **Il ne convient pas.*

{ **Convient-il?*

It is not becoming that they should inquire after it.

IL NE CONVIENT PAS qu'ils s'en informent.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 84. It is better, <i>*Il vaut mieux.</i>
<i>It would have been better for them to have held their tongues.</i> | IL AURAIT VALU MIEUX qu'elles se fussent tues. |
| 85. It is difficult, <i>*Il est difficile.</i>
<i>How difficult it is for them to know what they are about!</i> | Qu'IL EST DIFFICILE qu'ils ne sachent à quoi s'en tenir! |
| 86. It is doubtful, <i>Il est douteux que.</i>
<i>It was doubtful whether this matter would be settled amicably.</i> | IL ÉTAIT DOUTEUX que cette affaire fût arrangée à l'amiable. |
| 87. It is enough, <i>*Il suffit.</i>
<i>It is enough that we object.</i> | IL SUFFIT que nous soulevions des objections. |
| 88. It is essential, <i>*Il est essentiel.</i>
<i>Was it essential for him to resign?</i> | ÉTAIT-IL ESSENTIEL qu'il donnât sa démission? |
| 89. It is expedient, <i>*Il est convenable.</i>
<i>It would be expedient to have his speeches printed.</i> | IL SERAIT CONVENABLE que l'on fit imprimer ses discours. |
| 90. It is important, <i>*Il est important.</i>
<i>It is important that everybody should be convinced about it.</i> | IL EST IMPORTANT que tous en soient convaincus. |
| 91. It is impossible, <i>*Il est impossible.</i>
<i>Riches cannot help giving power.</i> | IL EST IMPOSSIBLE que les richesses ne donnent du pouvoir. |
| 92. It is indispensable, <i>*Il est indispensable.</i>
<i>That concert must commence before 8 o'clock.</i> | IL EST INDISPENSABLE que ce concert commence avant 8 heures. |
| 93. It is just, <i>*Il est juste.</i>
<i>It is but right that we should return them.</i> | IL EST JUSTE que nous les renvoyions. |
| 94. It is just possible, <i>Il pourrait bien arriver que.</i>
<i>It is just possible that it will rain the whole day.</i> | IL POURRAIT BIEN ARRIVER qu'il plût toute la journée. |
| 95. It is likely, <i>Il se peut que, il peut se faire que.</i>
<i>He may have been asked for them.</i>
<i>They might not come after all.</i> | IL SE PEUT qu'on les lui ait demandés.
Après tout IL SE POURRAIT FAIRE qu'elles ne vinssent point. |
| 96. It is marvellous, <i>*Il est merveilleux.</i>
<i>How marvellous that all that can be crammed into one carriage!</i> | Comme IL EST MERVEILLEUX qu'on puisse entasser tout cela dans une voiture! |
| 97. It is meet, { <i>*Il est convenable.</i>
{ <i>*Il est raisonnable.</i> | { [Like IT IS EXPEDIENT.] |
| 98. It might happen, <i>Il pourrait bien arriver que.</i> | [Like IT IS JUST POSSIBLE.] |

99. It is natural, **Il est naturel.*
It is natural that people should not care for it. | IL EST NATUREL qu'on en fasse peu de cas.
100. It is necessary, **Il faut, il est nécessaire.*
They must not interfere with that. | IL NE FAUT pas qu'ils s'en mêlent.
These young men had to know both languages. | IL ÉTAIT NÉCESSAIRE que ces jeunes gens comprissent les deux langues.
101. It is of no use, **Il est inutile.*
It was of no use my going away. | IL ÉTAIT INUTILE que je m'en allasse.
102. It is possible, **Il est possible.*
I do not think it is possible that they will ever submit to it. | JE NE PENSE PAS qu'il SOIT POSSIBLE qu'ils s'y soumettent jamais.
103. It is preferable, **Il vaut mieux.* [Like IT IS BETTER.]
104. It is pressing, **Il est urgent.*
It is pressing that you should answer him. | IL EST URGENT que vous lui répondiez.
105. It is probable, **Il est probable que...*
They are not likely to return. | IL EST PROBABLE qu'ils ne reviennent plus.
106. It is proper, **Il est bon.* [Like IT IS A GOOD THING.]
107. It is right, **Il est convenable.* [Like IT IS EXPEDIENT.]
108. It is strange, **Il est étrange.*
How strange it is that we do not now meet so often! | Qu'IL EST ÉTRANGE que l'on ne se voie plus si souvent!
109. It is sufficient, **Il suffit.* [Like IT IS ENOUGH.]
110. It is time, **Il est temps.*
It is time for us to go out. | IL EST TEMPS qu'on sorte.
111. It is to be presumed [neg.], **Il n'est pas à présumer que.* [Like TO PRESUME.]
112. It is to be regretted, **Il est à regretter que.* [Like TO REGRET.]
113. It is unfortunate, **Il est malheureux.*
It is unfortunate that there are so many beggars in that town. | IL EST MALHEUREUX qu'il y ait tant de mendiants dans cette ville.
114. It is urgent, **Il est urgent.* [Like IT IS PRESSING.]
115. It is useless, **Il est inutile.* [Like IT IS OF NO USE.]
116. It is well, **Il est bon.* [Like IT IS A GOOD THING.]
117. It is wonderful, **Il est merveilleux.* [Like IT IS MARVELLOUS.]
118. There is, there are but..., **Il n'y a que, il n'est que.*
There is but one country in which such crimes are perpetrated. | IL N'Y A QU'un seul pays où de tels crimes se commettent.
119. There are few...who, **Il y a peu de...qui, il est peu de...qui.*
There are few persons who were acquainted with it. | IL Y A PEU de personnes QUI en eussent connaissance.

120. There is, there are hardly any...who, *Il n'y a guère de...qui.*

There is hardly a master who did not blame him [for it]. | *IL N'Y A GUÈRE de professeurs qui ne l'en blâmassent.*

121. There is, there are no...who, *Il n'y a pas de...qui.*

There are no people whose conversation is more instructive. | *IL N'Y A PAS de gens dont la conversation soit plus instructive.*

122. There is nobody who..., *Il n'y a personne qui.*

There is no one who knows it better than he. | *IL N'Y A PERSONNE qui le sache mieux que lui.*

123. There is no doubt that..., *Il n'y a nul doute que...ne.*

There is no doubt that you will be astonished to hear of it. | *IL N'Y A NUL DOUTE que vous ne soyez surpris de l'entendre.*

The ellipsis of the verb often takes place :

It is no doubt advisable to give rewards. | *NUL DOUTE qu'il ne soit bon de donner des prix.*

124. There is } not any...who.
there are }

There is no friend of his who would have accepted it. | *Il n'y a aucun...qui.
Il n'y a point de...qui.
IL N'Y A AUCUN de ses amis qui en eût voulu.*

125. There is no one who, *Il n'y a personne qui.*

There was no one who would have ventured to say so. | *IL N'Y AVAIT PERSONNE qui eût osé le dire.*

126. There is nothing which, *Il n'y a rien qui.*

There is nothing which displeases me more than to... | *IL N'Y A RIEN qui me déplaît plus que de...*

127. There is, there are only, *Il n'y a que.* [Like THERE IS NOT.]

128. The worst of it is, **Le malheur est, *le pis est.*

The worst of it is, that there is no train to-night. | *LE MALHEUR EST qu'il n'y ait plus de départ ce soir.*

The worst of it is, that we must be satisfied with it. | *LE PIS EST qu'il faille s'en contenter.*

129. Be able { hardly, } to believe (to), *Avoir peine à croire.*
scarcely, }

You would hardly have believed that he could have left them. | *VOUS AURIEZ EU PEINE À CROIRE qu'il eût pu les quitter.*

130. Be able to help (to), [negatively], *Ne pouvoir que...ne.*

I cannot help being grieved at it. | *JE NE PUIS que je n'en sois désolé.*

These forms of *pouvoir* with the ellipsis of *empêcher*, although now obsolete, are occasionally to be met with in the writers of the seventeenth century; classical scholars readily grasp their meaning.

131. Be afraid (to), *Avoir peur que...ne.*

I am very much afraid you will injure each other. | *J'AI bien PEUR que vous ne vous nuisiez.*

Used negatively *avoir peur* does not take *ne* in the Subordinate Clause :

We were not afraid of its being too late. | *NOUS N'AVIONS PAS PEUR qu'il fût trop tard.*

Used interrogatively, the same rules given for *to fear* [craindre] (q. v.) apply to *avoir peur*, and the negative may be used or left out.

132. Be amazed (to), **S'étonner*. [Like TO BE ASTONISHED.]
 133. Be anxious (to), **Désirer*. [Like TO WISH.]
 134. Be apprehensive (to), **Appréhender*. [Like TO APPREHEND.]
 135. Be astonished (to), * *S'étonner de ce que..., que*.

<i>She often wondered at his being such a fool.</i>	Elle s'ÉTONNAIT souvent de ce qu'il fût si bête.
<i>I am astonished that he does not say any more.</i>	Je m'ÉTONNE qu'il n'en dise pas davantage.

136. Be aware (to), [negatively], *Ne pas savoir*. [Like TO KNOW.]
 137. Be careful not to (to), **Prendre garde*. [Like TO TAKE CARE.]
 138. Be certain (to), [negatively], **Ne pas être certain*.

<i>We are by no means certain of their having enjoyed themselves [there].</i>	Nous NE SOMMES nullement CERTAINS qu'elles s'y soient amusées.
---	--

139. Be charmed (to), }
 140. Be delighted (to), } **Être charmé*.

<i>We are delighted at your being here at last.</i>	Nous SOMMES CHARMÉS que vous soyez enfin arrivés.
---	---

141. Be doomed (to), *Le malheur veut que*.

<i>They were doomed to be wrecked.</i>	LE MALHEUR A VOULU qu'ils fissent naufrage.
--	---

142. Be doubtful (to), **Douter*. [Like TO DOUBT.]

143. Be enraged (to), **Être furieux de ce que..., que*.

<i>She is wild at your no longer writing to her.</i>	Elle EST FURIEUSE que vous ne lui écriviez plus.
--	--

144. Be exasperated (to), **Être irrité*.

<i>His friends were very much exasperated at his having left Paris.</i>	Sa famille ÉTAIT fort IRRITÉE qu'il fût parti de Paris.
---	---

145. { Be exceedingly glad (to), }
 { Be extremely pleased (to), } **Être enchanté*.

<i>Are not you exceedingly glad at their having succeeded?</i>	N'ÊTES-vous pas ENCHANTÉ qu'elles aient réussi?
--	---

146. Be far from believing (to), *Être loin de croire que*.

<i>His sister could not for one moment believe that you had said so.</i>	Sa sœur ÉTAIT LOIN DE CROIRE que vous eussiez dit cela.
--	---

147. Be far from thinking (to), *Être loin de penser que*.

<i>We are far from thinking that he will have reached Bombay.</i>	Nous SOMMES LOIN DE PENSER qu'il soit arrivé à Bombay.
---	--

148. Be glad (to), **Être bien aise que...de ce que*.

<i>Of course, everybody was glad that the matter had taken such a turn.</i>	Il va sans dire que tout le monde ÉTAIT BIEN AISE que l'affaire eût pris une telle tournure.
---	--

149. Be grieved to (to)... *Être affligé de...que*.

<i>They were grieved to learn that she had died so young.</i>	ILS ÉTAIENT AFFLIGÉS d'apprendre qu'elle fût morte si jeune.
---	--

150. Be happy (to), **Être heureux*.

She was very happy that they did not let her know [of it]. | Elle ÉTAIT fort HEUREUSE qu'on ne lui en ait pas fait part.

151. Be highly gratified (to), **Être on ne peut plus enchanté*.152. Be in a rage (to), **Être furieux*. [Like TO BE ENRAGED.]153. Be incensed (to), **Être irrité*. [Like TO BE EXASPERATED.]154. Be indignant (to), *S'indigner que*, **être indigné*.

I was indignant at their venturing to think so of me. | J'ÉTAIS INDIGNÉ qu'ils osassent penser cela de moi.

The auxiliary is frequently left out, and the Participle Past used alone at the beginning of the sentence :

Being indignant at being so badly treated... | INDIGNÉ de ce qu'on me traitait si mal...

155. Be in raptures (to), **Être ravi*.

She was in raptures at her son having passed his examination. | Elle FUT RAVIE que son fils eût passé son examen.

156. Be [obliged], to, *Devoir* [interrogatively].

In rendering the Hypothetical Tense *were I*, the Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood of *Devoir* is used interrogatively without the conjunction *que*, and an acute accent placed on the final *e* mute :

Were I to repent it all my life ! | DUSSE-JE m'en repentir toute ma vie !

157. Be pleased (to), **Être content*.

I am pleased at your having invited them. | Je SUIS CONTENT que vous les ayez invités.

158. Be sorry (to), **Être fâché*.

We are sorry that they were so inattentive. | Nous SOMMES FÂCHÉS qu'ils fussent si inattentifs.

159. Be so silly as to (to), *Se garder de...que*.

Do not be so silly as to believe that he was ill. | GARDEZ-VOUS DE croire qu'il ait été malade.

160. Be sure (to), [negatively], *Ne pas être sûr*.

I am not sure that they will be able to learn it by heart. | Je NE SUIS PAS SÛR qu'ils sachent l'apprendre par cœur.

161. Be told (to), [interrogatively], **Prendre que*.

Who told you that his friends wished to get rid of him ? | Où AVEZ-VOUS PRIS que ses parents voulaient s'en débarrasser ?

162. Be uncertain (to), *Ne pas être certain*. [Like TO BE SURE.]163. Be under the apprehension (to), *Appréhender que...ne*.

[Like TO APPREHEND.]

164. Be vexed (to), *Être irrité, être fâché*.165. Bear (to), [endure], interrogatively or negatively], *Souffrir*.

He could not bear being corrected. | Il NE POUVAIT SOUFFRIR qu'on le réprimandât.

166. Believe (to), *Croire.

(i.) Interrogatively or negatively :

Did you believe it was so late ?
We do not think she will ever recover.

CROYEZ-VOUS qu'il *fût* si tard ?
 NOUS NE CROYONS PAS qu'elle se *rétablisse* jamais.

(ii.) Affirmatively, but preceded by a dubitative adjunct :

I am far from thinking that this is the case. Je SUIS LOIN DE CROIRE que cela *soit* vrai.
It is hard to believe that she could have fallen in love with that man. Il EST DIFFICILE DE CROIRE qu'elle *ait pu* s'éprendre de cet homme-là.

In the sentence :

Do you believe he will do it ? | CROYEZ-VOUS qu'il le FASSE ?
 a real doubt is expressed, and *Croyez-vous qu'il le fasse ?* corresponds to : *For my own part, I do not know whether he will do a certain thing, but do you believe that he will do it ?*

But, if rendered by means of the Indicative Mood :

Do you believe that he will do it ? | CROYEZ-VOUS qu'il le FERA ?

then, a certainty on the part of the speaker is implied that the person referred to will not do the thing mentioned, and its equivalent is : *Do you, then, for one moment suppose that he will ever do it ?*

167. Beseech (to), *Supplier.

They entreated that wine might be administered to them. | Ils SUPPLIÈRENT qu'on leur donnât du vin.

This verb is generally used with the preposition *de* and the Infinitive :

I entreated him to do us that favour. | Je le SUPPLIAI *de* nous *faire* cette grâce.

168. Beware (to), *Prendre garde. [Like TO TAKE CARE.]**169. Care about (to), Tenir à ce que.**

Do you care about our going there ? | TENEZ-VOUS à ce que nous nous y rendions ?

I very much want them all to learn Latin. | Je TIENS beaucoup à ce qu'elles *apprennent* toutes le latin.

170. Choose (to), Il me plaît [impersonal].

I do not choose you to tell him so. | IL ne ME PLAÎT pas que vous le lui disiez.

171. Command (to), *Commander.

The general ordered them to be flogged. | Le général COMMANDA qu'on les fustigeât.

172. Complain (to), Se plaindre de ce que.

I shall always complain of my enemies having slandered me ever since I gained the lawsuit I instituted against them. | Je ME PLAINDRAI sans cesse de ce que mes ennemis m'aient *calomnié* depuis que j'ai gagné le procès intenté contre eux.

173. Concede (to), *Admettre. [Like TO ADMIT.]**174. Conceive (to), [negatively], Ne pas concevoir.**

Not conceiving that these men were ever ready to attempt impossibilities. | NE CONCEVANT PAS que ces gens-là fussent toujours prêts à tenter l'impossible.

175. Conjecture (to), *Supposer.

Do you suppose that he got out of that scrape ? | SUPPOSEZ-VOUS qu'il se soit *tiré* d'affaire ?

176. Consent (to), *Consentir que, vouloir bien que.*

*We consented to his absenting himself.
I shall never consent to your laying
out that money.*

I am quite willing that you should do so.

NOUS CONSENTÎMES qu'il s'absentât.
Je ne CONSENTIRAI jamais à ce que
vous dépensiez cet argent.

Je VEUX BIEN que vous le fassiez.

177. Demand (to), *Demander, exiger.*

*They demanded the immediate pay-
ment of the fine.*

*They insist on the amount being paid
in advance.*

On DEMANDA qu'il payât l'amende
sur-le-champ.

On EXIGE que le montant soit payé
d'avance.

V. TO REQUIRE for the use of *exiger*.

178. Deny (to), *Nier que.*

We deny that he was wrong.

(i.) With a negative in the Principal Clause, *nier* generally takes *ne* in the Subordinate Clause :

You cannot deny its being true.

NOUS NIONS qu'il ait eu tort.

Vous NE POUVEZ NIER qu'il ne soit
vrai.

(ii.) Used interrogatively, the Subordinate Clause always requires *ne* :

*Did they deny having received those
papers?*

ONT-ILS NIÉ qu'ils n'aient reçu ces
documents?

179. Depend (to), [impersonal], *Il dépend de...que, il tient à...que.*

*It will depend on him if I do obtain
the object of my request.*

*It was not my fault if they did not
make their fortune.*

IL DÉPENDRA de lui que j'obtienne
l'objet de ma demande.

Il ne TINT pas à moi qu'ils ne fissent
fortune.

And :

*How is it that she is so very much in love
with him? Never mind.*

A quoi TIENT-il qu'elle en soit si amoureuse?
Qu'à cela ne TIENNE.

180. Deserve (to), *Mériter que.*

*Do not their actions deserve to be
censured?*

Leurs actions ne MÉRITENT-elles pas
qu'on les censure?

181. Desire (to), **Désirer, *prétendre.*

*I would wish that these two brothers
should love each other more.*

I desire you to do this at once.

Je DÉSIRERAI que ces deux frères
s'aimassent davantage.

Je PRÉTENDS que vous fassiez ceci à
l'instant même.

182. Disapprove (to), *Désapprouver, ne pas approuver.*

*Why did his wife disapprove of his
taking such a step?*

*I should always have disapproved of
such steps being taken.*

Pourquoi sa femme DÉSAPPROUVA-t-
elle qu'il prit ce parti?

Je N'aurais JAMAIS APPROUVÉ qu'on
eût fait de telles démarches.

183. Dislike (to), *Trouver mauvais, ne pas aimer.*

I dislike your going earlier.

She did dislike his writing to her.

Je TROUVE MAUVAIS qu'on y aille de
meilleure heure.

Elle N'AIMA pas qu'il lui écrivît.

184. Do one's best (to), *Faire*. [1st and 2nd persons of the Imperative.]
Pray, do your best so that this does not happen again. | FAITES, je vous prie, que cela n'arrive plus.

185. Doubt (to), **Douter*.
We doubt if they can understand that rule. | Nous DOUTONS qu'ils puissent comprendre cette règle.
Do you doubt that there is a God? | DOUTEZ-VOUS qu'il y ait un Dieu?
 Conjugated negatively, *douter* requires the verb in the Subordinate Clause to be preceded by *ne*:

I did not doubt your being ready to serve him. | Je NE DOUTAIS PAS que vous NE fussiez prêt à le servir.

We did not doubt his having been there. | NOUS NE DOUTIONS PAS qu'il n'eût été là.

186. Endure (to), [int. or negatively], **Souffrir*. [Like TO BEAR.]

187. Entertain the least doubt (to), [neg.], *Ne douter nullement que...ne*.

188. Entreat (to), **Supplier*. [Like TO BESEECH.]

189. Expect (to), *S'attendre à ce que, espérer que* [negat.].

Why does he always expect us to invite him? | Pourquoi s'ATTEND-il toujours à ce que nous l'invitions?

(i.) When translated by *espérer*, the Subjunctive Mood is to be used only after a Principal Clause containing a negative:

I do not expect you to write to both of them. | Je N'ESPÈRE PAS que vous écriviez à l'un et à l'autre.

(ii.) Conjugated interrogatively, *espérer* does not necessarily govern the Subjunctive Mood:

Did they really expect me to come at so late an hour?

ESPÉRAIENT-ILS vraiment que je { vinsse { sub. } } à une heure si indue?
 { viendrais { cond. } }

(iii.) Conjugated affirmatively, *espérer* takes the Future in the Subordinate Clause:

I hope you will pay them a visit the day after to-morrow at the latest. | J'ESPÈRE que vous leur ferez une visite après-demain au plus tard.

190. Fancy (to), [neg. or inter.], *S'imaginer*.

We did not fancy that they wished to impose upon us. | Nous ne NOUS SOMMES pas IMAGINÉ qu'ils voulussent nous tromper.

191. Fear (to), *Craindre que...ne*.

We fear that they are studying too much. | Nous CRAIGNONS qu'ils n'étudient trop.

She was afraid of being kept waiting. | Elle CRAIGNAIT qu'on ne la fit attendre.

I fear they are coming. | Je CRAINS qu'ils ne viennent.

(i.) In the latter example [*je crains qu'ils ne viennent*], apprehension or dread is expressed; and the speaker has no wish that they should come, but is in fear of their doing so in spite of him. If, on the other hand, a desire that they should come, were present to the speaker's mind, then the verb in the Subordinate Clause requires not only *ne*, but also *pas* as well:
I am afraid they are not coming. | Je CRAINS qu'ils ne viennent pas.

(ii.) *Craindre* used negatively never takes *ne* in the Subordinate Clause:
I am not afraid they will come. | Je NE CRAINS PAS qu'ils viennent.

(iii.) Conjugated interrogatively, *craindre* requires or rejects *ne* in the Dependent Clause: It takes *ne*, if the verb in the Principal Clause contains an affirmation:
What! are you afraid they will come? | Quoi! CRAIGNEZ-VOUS qu'ils ne viennent?

The negative is dispensed with, if the verb in the Principal Clause evidently conveys negation:

You are [surely not] afraid that they will come? | CRAIGNEZ-VOUS vraiment qu'ils viennent?

(iv.) When conjugated interrogatively with a negative, the particle *ne* may be expressed or omitted :

Are not you afraid they will come ? | *NE CRAIGNEZ-VOUS PAS* { *qu'ils ne viennent ?*
qu'ils viennent ?

NOTE.—Poetical license sanctions the omission of *ne* in the subordinate clause :

“ *Qui rit d'autrui,*
Doit CRAINDRE qu'en revanche on rie aussi de lui. ” —MOLIÈRE.

192. Find (to), *Se trouver* [impersonal].

None were found willing to credit it. | *IL ne s'en TROUVA point qui voulus-*
sent y ajouter foi.

193. Forbid (to), **Défendre*.

Did you forbid us to communicate with him ? | *Avez-vous DÉFENDU que nous entrions*
en communication avec lui ?

194. Follow (to), [impers., neg., or inter.], *Il ne s'ensuit pas*.

It does not follow that she is right. | *IL NE S'ENSUIT PAS qu'elle ait raison.*

195. Give orders (to), **Ordonner*.

I shall give orders not to admit them. | *J'ORDONNERAI qu'on ne les admette*
pas.

In legal phraseology, the Indicative Mood is used, because no uncertainty attaches to the execution of the order issued : *Nous avons ORDONNÉ et ORDONNONS qu'il sera fait*, etc.

196. Happen (to), [negat.], *Il n'arrive pas* [impersonal].

It does not often happen that clocks strike the half hours. | *IL N'ARRIVE PAS souvent que les*
pendules sonnent les demies.

Conjugated affirmatively and preceded by a dubitative expression, this verb also governs the Subjunctive :

Such a thing might well happen. | *IL POURRAIT BIEN ARRIVER que cela fût.*
If they happened to be defeated. | *S'IL ARRIVAIT qu'ils fussent vaincus.*

197. Hate (to), *Hair que*.

I hate people to tell me a thing twice. | *Je HAIS qu'on me redise une chose.*

In the sense of *rather to like a thing*, the verb *ne pas hair* also governs the Subjunctive :
Those girls rather like being flattered. | *Ces filles NE HAISSENT PAS qu'on les flatte.*

198. Have to (to), [to be compelled, to prefer], *Falloir, etc.*

[Like IT IS NECESSARY, TO PREFER, TO WILL.]

199. Have need (to), **Avoir besoin que*.

They need not be told the same thing twice. | *Ils n'ONT pas BESOIN qu'on leur dise*
deux fois la même chose.

200. Implore (to), **Supplier*. [Like TO BESECH.]

201. Imagine (to), [neg. or inter.], *Imaginer*. [Like TO FANCY.]

202. Intend (to), *Prétendre, entendre..*

They do not intend to be treated disrespectfully. | *Ils ne PRÉTENDENT pas qu'on leur*
manque de respect.
I mean that nothing shall be done with- | *J'ENTENDS qu'on ne fuisse rien à mon*
out me. | *insu.*

Prétendre [to affirm, to maintain] } govern the verb in the Indicative Mood :
Entendre [to hear, to understand] }

She always maintains that she is younger | *Elle PRÉTEND toujours qu'elle est plus*
than she really is. | *jeune qu'elle ne l'est en réalité.*

203. Insist (to), *Insister pour que, exiger que*.

I insist on your holding your tongue. | *J'INSISTE pour que vous vous taisiez.*

204. Know (to), [negat.], **Ne pas savoir*, **ignorer*.

<i>I did not know that they were to pay you a visit.</i>	Je NE SAVAIS PAS qu'ils <i>dussent</i> venir vous voir.
<i>We were not aware of his having asked you to...</i>	Nous NE SAVIONS pas qu'il vous <i>eût</i> demandé de...
<i>He does not know of their arrival.</i>	Il IGNORE qu'ils <i>soient</i> arrivés.

(i.) *Savoir* is one of the few verbs which are used in the Subjunctive Mood without being under the dependence of another verb:

<i>I know no one who can be compared to her.</i>	Je NE SACHE personne qu'on <i>puisse</i> lui comparer.
<i>We know nothing more beautiful than this.</i>	Nous NE SACHIONS rien de plus beau.

(ii.) *Que je sache* is frequently met with as an equivalent for *as far as I know*, and is always placed at the end of the sentence:

<i>As far as I know, there is nobody at home.</i>	Il n'y a personne à la maison, <i>que je sache</i> .
---	--

The same phrase is also used in rendering *not that I know of*:

<i>Have those friends of yours ever been abroad?</i>	Vos amis ont-ils jamais été à l'étranger?
<i>Not that I know of.</i>	<i>Non pas QUE JE SACHE.</i>

(iii.) *Ignorer* used *negatively* corresponds to the affirmative *to know*, and as such governs the Indicative Mood:

<i>I knew of their having learnt German.</i>	Je N'IGNORAI PAS qu'ils <i>avaient appris</i> l'allemand.
--	---

205. Like (to), **Aimer, tenir à ce que*.

<i>We should not like to be made fun of.</i>	Nous n'AIMERIONS pas qu'on se moquât de nous.
<i>She likes to be told that she is good looking.</i>	Elle TIENT à ce qu'on lui <i>dise</i> qu'elle est belle.

206. Matter (to), [impers.], *Il importe*.

<i>It matters that we should be in time.</i>	IL IMPORTE que nous y <i>soyons</i> à temps.
<i>It does not matter whether we are in time.</i>	PEU IMPORTE que nous y <i>soyons</i> à temps.

The latter phrase is sometimes placed at the end of the sentence:

<i>It mattered little whether she or I were rich.</i>	Que ce <i>fût</i> moi qui fusse riche, que ce <i>fût</i> elle, PEU IMPORTAIT.
---	---

207. May (to), [impers.], **Il se peut que, il est possible*.

<i>I may do it during the next fortnight.</i>	IL SE PEUT que je le <i>fasse</i> dans une quinzaine.
<i>You may have met her more than once.</i>	IL EST POSSIBLE que vous l' <i>ayez rencontrée</i> plus d'une fois.

In expressing a wish, the Subjunctive Mood of *pouvoir* is used interrogatively, without being preceded by the conjunction *que*:

<i>May they be more successful in future!</i>	PUISSENT-ils être plus heureux à l'avenir!
<i>May I never see them again!</i>	PUISSÉ-je ne plus les revoir!

Some authors have used *être* in the same sense:

"Sois-je du ciel écrasé si je mens!"—MOLIÈRE.

208. Mind (to), [to take heed], { 1. *Prendre garde que...ne* [apprehension].
2. *Prendre garde que...* [advice].

i. <i>Mind that they do not deceive you.</i>	PRENEZ GARDE qu'ils ne vous <i>trompent</i> .
1. <i>I shall take care that nobody sees us.</i>	Je PRENDRAI GARDE que personne ne nous <i>voie</i> .
2. <i>Be careful and listen to all that is said.</i>	PRENEZ GARDE que vous <i>écoutiez</i> tout ce qui se dit.

In the sense of *to observe*, the Indicative Mood is used :

Observe that this phrase is seldom used.

PRENEZ GARDE que cette phrase s'emploie rarement.

209. Mind (to), [to watch], *Veiller à ce que, voir à ce que.*

Mind that fellow, so that he does not become one of your enemies.

VEILLEZ à ce que cet individu ne devienne pas un de vos ennemis.

210. Object (to), } *S'opposer à ce que.*

211. Oppose (to), }

I object to your reading any of these books.

Je M'OPPOSE à ce que vous lisiez aucun de ces livres-là.

212. Order (to), *Ordonner.* [Like TO GIVE ORDERS.]

213. Permit (to), } *Permettre.*

} *Souffrir [negatively.]*

[Like TO ALLOW.]

214. Please [to suit], *Plaire [impersonal.]*

Your incessant interference does not please me.

IL ne ME PLAÎT pas que vous vous en mêliez toujours.

In the form of a wish, *faire* in the Principal Clause is used in the Subjunctive Mood :
God forbid that we should even think so! A Dieu ne PLAISE que nous *pensions* cela !
Would to God that they led a happier life ! PLUT à Dieu qu'ils *menassent* une vie plus heureuse !

215. Prefer (to), *Aimer mieux, préférer.*

We should prefer your not interfering in that matter.

Nous AIMERIONS MIEUX que vous ne vous *entremissiez* pas de cette affaire.

Did you not prefer his travelling without us ?

Ne PRÉFÉRIEZ-vous pas qu'il *voyageât* sans nous ?

216. Presume (to), [negatively], *Ne pas présumer.*

It is not to be presumed that they were guiltless.

IL N'EST PAS À PRÉSUMER qu'ils *fussent* innocents.

Used affirmatively, the Indicative Mood is to be employed :
I presume he will allow the matter to drop. Je PRÉSUME qu'il en *accueillera* là.

217. Prevent (to), *Empêcher que...ne.*

That will prevent our telling him.

Cela EMPÊCHERA que nous ne le lui *disions*.

When used negatively or interrogatively, *ne* may either be inserted or omitted in the Subordinate Clause :

We should not prevent their going out.

Nous n'EMPÊCHERIONS pas { qu'ils *ne* *sortis-*
sent.
 qu'ils *sortissent.*

218. Prohibit (to), *Défendre.* [Like TO FORBID.]

219. Regret (to), *Regretter.*

We regret its having taken place.

Nous REGRETTONS que cela *ait eu* lieu.

The Infinitive Mood is to be used when the Subordinate Clause contains a Pronoun of the first person :

I regret that I went away so soon.

Je REGRETTE d'être parti si tôt.

220. Request (to), *Demander.* [Like TO ASK.]

221. Require (to), *Entendre que, exiger que.*

I require all these tasks to be done better.

J'ENTENDS que tous ces devoirs *soient* mieux *faits*.

Does she require these letters to be handed over to her ?

EXIGE-t-elle qu'on lui *remette* ces lettres ?

When a certainty attaches to the fulfilment of the order given, the Subjunctive Mood is not used :

Prisoners were required to go to bed at dusk. | On EXIGEÀ que les prisonniers se coucheraient à la tombée de la nuit.

222. See (to), **Ne pas voir, voir* [à ce que].

I do not see her coming. | Je NE VOIS PAS qu'elle vienne.
See that there is nothing wanting. | VOYEZ qu'il n'y manque rien.

223. Seem (to), **Sembler* [impersonal].

(i.) Affirmatively or interrogatively with a negative :

There seems to be no remedy for this disease. | IL SEMBLE que ce mal soit sans remède.
Does it not seem as if he did it on purpose? | NE SEMBLE-T-IL PAS qu'il l'ait fait exprès?

(ii.) Preceded by *me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur*, and conjugated negatively or interrogatively with a negation :

To me there does not seem to be a remedy. | IL NE ME SEMBLE PAS qu'il y ait un remède.
Does it not seem to you as if he had done it on purpose? | NE VOUS SEMBLE-T-IL PAS qu'il l'ait fait exprès?

The Indicative Mood is to be used when an assertion is made :

In my opinion there seems to be a remedy. | IL ME SEMBLE qu'il y a un remède.

224. Send word (to), **Mander que*.

He sent word for him to attend on the following day. | IL lui MANDA qu'il se présentât le lendemain.

225. Succeed (to), *Obtenir que*.

At last he succeeded in having his salary increased. | IL OBTINT enfin qu'on augmentât son salaire.

226. Suffer (to), *Permettre, ne pas souffrir*. [Like TO ALLOW.]

227. Suit (to), *Plaire* [impersonal]. [Like TO PLEASE.]

228. Suppose (to), **Supposer*.

I suppose they consented to the judgment. | Je SUPPOSE qu'ils aient acquiescé au jugement.

229. Surmise (to), }

230. Suspect (to), } [interrog. and negatively], **Soupçonner*.

He did not suspect me of having made that blunder. | IL NE SOUPÇONNAIT pas que j'eusse fait cette bévue.

Used affirmatively, the Indicative Mood is required :

I suspect him to be the author of it. | Je SOUPÇONNE qu'il en est l'auteur.

231. Take care (to), { *Prendre soin que, se garder de ...que;*
 { *Prendre garde que...ne, avoir soin que.*

He took care that they should no longer be afraid of it. | IL A PRIS SOIN qu'ils n'en eussent plus peur.

I took good care not to believe that he had gone out. | Je ME GARDAI DE CROIRE qu'il fût sorti.

We shall take care that they do not think of it any more. | NOUS AURONS SOIN qu'ils n'y songent plus.

232. Think (to), *Penser que*.

(i.) Used interrogatively or negatively :

Who would have thought that they arrived in London before us? | Qui EÛT PENSÉ qu'ils fussent arrivés à Londres avant nous?

I did not think that they were so generous. | Je NE PENSAI PAS qu'elles fussent si généreuses.

(ii.) Affirmatively, but only when preceded by the dubitative conjunction *si*:
If I thought that were about to happen. | *SI JE PENSAIS que cela dût arriver.*

The expression, *one would think*, in the sense of *it looks, it appears, it seems as if*, is rendered by *dirai* in the third person singular of the Conditional Mood:

One would think that he has lost all his money. | *ON DIRAIT qu'il ait perdu tout son argent.*

But many instances occur when *on dirait* governs the Indicative Mood.

233. Tremble (to), *Trembler que...ne.*

The very thought of your having told them so, made him tremble.

Poor fellow! I am very much afraid he is wrecked.

IL TREMBLAIT que vous ne le leur eussiez raconté.

Pauvre diable! je TREMBLE qu'il n'ait fait naufrage.

The negative disappears from the Subordinate Clause if *trembler* is used negatively:

They did not dread the horror of being exposed.

Ils NE TREMBLAIENT PAS qu'on les dénonçât.

234. Understand (to) [negat.]

I do not understand how you can have dreamt of doing such a thing.

They cannot make out why she should so far have forgotten herself as to...

{ Ne pas comprendre que.

{ Ne pas s'expliquer que [or] comment.

Je NE COMPRENDS PAS que vous ayez pu songer à faire une chose pareille.

Ils NE peuvent s'EXPLIQUER comment elle ait pu s'oublier à un tel point que de...

235. Use one's utmost endeavours (to), *Faire que.*

[Like TO DO ONE'S BEST.]

236. Wait until (to), *Attendre que, attendre jusqu'à ce que.*

Wait till they write about it.

We shall not wait for her to do so.

ATTENDEZ qu'ils vous en écrivent.

Nous n'ATTENDRONS pas qu'elle le fasse.

237. Want (to), [desire, wish, necessity]. }

238. Will (to), *Vouloir que.* }

I will have you know that I am master.

We wanted them to get rid of that dog.

She would have us learn them by heart.

Je VEUX que vous sachiez que je suis le maître.

Nous VOULIONS qu'ils se débarrassent de ce chien-là.

Elle VOULUT que nous les apprissions par cœur.

239. Wish (to), *Désirer que, souhaiter que.*

Did they wish you to mention it?

I wish him every success in his undertaking.

DÉSIRAIENT-ils que vous en parlassiez?

Je SOUHAITE qu'il réussisse dans son entreprise.

To wish ardently is sometimes rendered by *prier Dieu*:

I ardently wished that they might soon recover.

Je PRIAI DIEU qu'ils guérissent bientôt.

240. Wonder (to), *S'étonner.* [Like TO BE ASTONISHED.]

PARTICLES AND CONJUNCTIVAL EXPRESSIONS WHICH GOVERN THE
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

241. Although, *Bien que, quoique, encore que.*
Although both were so dear to us. | *QUOIQUE l'une et l'autre nous fussent si chères.*
242. Before, { 1. *Avant que* [without doubt].
 2. *Avant que...ne* [uncertainty].
1. *Before we had thought of it.* | *AVANT QUE nous y eussions songé.*
 2. *Before we had provided for it.* | *AVANT QUE nous n'y eussions pourvu.*
243. Except, *Sinon que.*
Except it be used against us. | *SINON QU'on en fasse usage contre nous.*
244. For fear, *De crainte que...ne.*
For fear I should forget them. | *DE CRAINTE QUE je ne les oublie.*
245. However, *Pour* [adjective] *que...* [obsolete].
However powerful ye may be! | *POUR grands QUE vous soyez!*
246. However little [in quantity], *Pour peu que, si peu que.*
However little you may take care of them. | *POUR PEU QUE vous en preniez soin.*
247. However [adjective], *Tout* [adjective] *que.*
However loving and graceful they were. | *TOUT aimables et TOUTES gracieuses QU'elles fussent.*
Tout is the only Adverb which varies, when followed by a feminine Adjective which begins with a consonant or aspirate *h*.
248. In case, *En cas que, au cas que.*
In case they should have made a mistake. | *EN CAS QU'elles se fussent trompées.*
249. In order that, *Afin que, pour que.*
In order that he might take more interest in it. | *POUR QU'il s'en occupât plus sérieusement.*
250. In spite of, *Malgré que* [in conjunction with *en avoir*].
They went away in spite of him. | *Ils sont partis MALGRÉ QU'il en ait.*
En dépit de lui, etc., is preferable.
251. Instead, *Loin que.*
Instead of their being inclined to assist you. | *LOIN QU'ils soient disposés à vous servir.*
252. It is enough for, *C'est assez pour* [objective] *que.*
It was enough for him that they were caught. | *C'ÉTAIT ASSEZ POUR lui QU'on les eût pris.*
253. It is not that, *Non que...ne.*
It is not that they wished to follow me. | *NON QU'ils n'aient voulu me suivre.*
254. It is sufficient, *C'est assez que.*
It is sufficient that you have done your best. | *C'EST ASSEZ QUE vous ayez fait de votre mieux.*

255. **Lest, *De peur que...ne.***
Lest they should apply to me. | **DE PEUR QU'ILS NE s'adressent à moi.**
256. **Not that, *Ce n'est pas que, non pas que.***
Not that his brother wished to complain of them. | **CE N'EST PAS QUE son frère ait voulu s'en plaindre.**
Not that we are dissatisfied with his behaviour. | **NON PAS QUE nous soyons mécontents de sa conduite.**
Bien que and quoique are to be preferred.
257. **Notwithstanding, *Nonobstant que.***
Notwithstanding my having repeatedly told him so. | **NONOBTANT QUE je le lui aie dit plusieurs fois.**
258. **Provided, *Pourvu que.***
Provided we can make him understand it. | **POURVU QUE nous puissions le lui faire comprendre.**
259. **So as to, *Pour que* [preceded by *assez* or *trop*].**
You have neglected her too long [so as] to expect anything from her. | **Vous l'avez négligée trop longtemps, POUR QUE vous espériez rien d'elle.**
260. **So that, **De sorte que, *de manière que, en sorte que.***
Do it so that we are satisfied with it. | **FAITES DE SORTE que nous en soyons satisfaits.**
So that you acquit yourselves well of it. | **DE MANIÈRE QUE vous vous en acquittiez bien.**
- De manière que, with a Subjunctive marks a tendency to the fulfilment of the object in view; when the object is attained, the Indicative Mood is used.*
De façon que is also used and not unfrequently governs the Indicative Mood.
261. **Supposing, *Supposé que, si tant est que.***
Supposing that many more were wanted. | **SUPPOSÉ QU'ON eût besoin d'un plus grand nombre.**
If it is as you say. | **SI TANT EST QUE la chose soit comme tu dis.**
262. **Unless, *A moins que...ne, si ce n'est que.***
Unless you prefer my writing to him. | **À MOINS QUE vous ne préféreriez que je lui écrive.**
Unless you had first mentioned it to me. | **SI CE N'EST QUE vous ne m'en eussiez parlé d'abord.**
263. **Until, *Jusqu'à ce que, en attendant que.***
Let us wait until they have the power. | **Attendons JUSQU'À CE QU'ils en aient le pouvoir.**
Until you have heard both sides. | **EN ATTENDANT QUE vous ayez entendu les deux parties.**
- Jusqu'à ce que governs the Indicative in the Subordinate Clause, when it refers to an unforeseen event, independent of the first verb.*
264. **Wheresoever, *Où que.***
Wheresoever they be, God grant that they may be happy! | **OÙ QU'elles soient, DIEU FASSE qu'elles soient heureuses!**

265. **Whether, *Soit que*.**[*Soit que* may be repeated, instead of using *ou*.]*Whether he write or not.*

SOIT QU'il	{ SOIT }	QU'il n'écrive
écrive,			ou	pas.

266. **Without, *Sans que*.***Without my having perceived it.*

SANS QUE je m'en sois aperçue.

QUE

AS AN EQUIVALENT FOR SEVERAL PARTICLES WHICH GOVERN THE
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.267. **Although, *Que* [quoique].***Although they are on the way to recovery, and [although they] have informed us of it.*QUOIQ' ils relèvent de maladie et
QU'ils nous en aient fait part.268. **Before, *Que* [avant que...ne].***We shall not call upon him, before he has invited us.*Nous n'irons point le voir, QU'il ne
nous ait invités.269. **For fear, *Que...ne* [de peur que...ne].***I was very much alarmed for fear she might ask me for them.*Je tremblai QU'elle ne me les de-
mandât.270. **If, *Que* [si with Indicative Mood].***If I were not there, and if you should happen to think of your old friend.*Si je n'étais pas là, et QUE tu vinsses
à penser à ton vieux ami.271. **In order, *Que* [afin que, pour que].***In order that she may know it and not be surprised at it.*Afin qu'elle le sache et QU'elle n'en
soit point surprise.272. **Lest, *Que...ne* [de peur que...ne].***Lest they should go out at night and catch cold.*De peur qu'elles ne sortissent le soir
et QU'elles ne s'enrhumassent.273. **So that, *Que* [en sorte que].***Make me love them.*

Fais QUE je les aime.

274. **Supposing, *Que* [supposé que].***Supposing that such a misfortune were to befall us.*

QU'un pareil malheur nous arrivât.

275. **Unless, *Que* [à moins que...ne].***He will not go unless he be invited or compelled to go.*Il n'ira pas, à moins qu'on ne l'invite
ou QU'on ne l'y force.276. **Until, *Que* [jusqu'à ce que].***Wait until you hear more about it.*Attendez QU'on vous en dise des
nouvelles.277. **Whether, *Que* [soit que].***Whether he go or stay.**Whether it was I or she who said so.*SOIT QU'IL y aille ou QU'il y reste.
QUE ce fût moi qui l'eusse dit, QUE ce
fût elle.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS, PERSONAL PRONOUNS AND ADVERBS, WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

278. However [followed by an adjective], } 1. *Quelque* [adjective] *que*.
 } 2. *Si* [adjective] *que*.

1. *However rich they may become.*

QUELQUE [adverb and invar.] *riches*
 QU'ils *deviennent*.

2. *However estimable science may be.*

SI *estimable* QUE *soit* la science.

Some writers make use of *tout... que* with the Subjunctive Mood :

However innocent and generous she was...

TOUT *innocente* et TOUTE *généreuse* QU'elle
fut... R. 247 Note.

279. However [followed by an adverb], *Quelque* [adverb] *que*.

However cruelly they may have been tried.

QUELQUE [adverb and invariable] *finiment*
 QU'ils aient été *éprouvés*.

280. In which [dubitative], ‡ *Où, duquel, dans lequel.*

I shall buy a book in which I can find better definitions.

J'achèterai un livre OÙ je *puisse*
 trouver des définitions plus com-
 plètes.

281. Of which, }
 282. Of whom, } [dubitative], *dont*.

There is no contradiction of which he is not capable.

Il n'est point de contradiction DONT
 il ne *soit* capable.

283. Whatever [followed by a substantive], *Quel que, quelle que, quels que, quelles que.*

Whatever his talents may be.

QUELS QUE *soient* ses talents.

284. Whatever [followed by an adjective and a noun.], *Quelque* [adjective and subst.], *que.*

Whatever great orators these statesmen may be.

QUELQUE *grands orateurs* QUE *soient*
 ces hommes d'état.

In this sense *quelque* is an adverb and invariable, so long as it is accompanied by one of the verbs *devenir, être, paraître, sembler*.

285. Whatever [followed by a pronoun], *Quoi que.*

I shall tell them so, whatever you may think.

Je le leur dirai, QUOI QUE *vous en*
pensiez.

286. Whatever [thing], *Quoi que ce soit que.*

Whatever they may do, they will not succeed in persuading me.

QUOI QUE CE SOIT QU'ils *fassent*, ils
 ne *réussiront* point à me persuader.

287. Whatsoever, *Quoi que, quoi que ce soit que.* [v. R. 285-286.]

288. Where [dubitative], ‡ *Où.*

We shall move into a neighbourhood where we may be free from their importunities.

Nous irons dans un quartier OÙ nous
soyons à l'abri de leurs impor-
 tunités.

‡ These expressions govern the Indicative Mood, if no doubt attaches to them :

[R. 285.] } *I have a dictionary in which I have found that definition.*
 } J'ai un dictionnaire où j'ai trouvé cette définition.

[R. 286.] } *We are living in a neighbourhood where we are free from their importunities.*
 } Nous demeurons dans un quartier où nous sommes à l'abri de leurs importunités.

289. Which [dubitative], ‡*Que*.

<i>Send me some clothes which I can wear in doors.</i>	Envoyez-moi des vêtements QUE je puisse porter à la maison.
--	--

290. Who [dubitative], ‡*Qui*.

<i>I do not think there is an author who has made use of this expression.</i>	Je ne pense pas qu'il y ait un auteur QUI se soit servi de cette expression.
---	---

291. Whoever, *Qui que ce soit qui*.

Whoever has told you so.

{	QUI QUE CE SOIT QUI vous ait dit cela... QUI QUE CE PUISSE ÊTRE QUI vous ait dit cela...
---	---

292. Whom [dubitative], ‡*Que*. [Like WHICH.]

293. Whomsoever, *Qui que ce soit qui*. [Like WHOEVER.]

294. Whose [dubitative], ‡*Dont*.

<i>Was it an instrument whose perfection was known to you?</i>	Etait-ce un instrument DONT la perfection vous fût connue?
--	---

SUPERLATIVES RELATIVE WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

295. The first, *le premier*.

<i>Is he the first who mentioned it?</i>	Est-ce LE PREMIER qui en ait fait mention?
--	---

296. The last, *le dernier*.

<i>Is that the last time you met?</i>	Est-ce la DERNIÈRE fois que vous vous soyez rencontrés?
---------------------------------------	--

297. The best, *le meilleur*.

<i>The best use you can make of it, is not to put any faith in it.</i>	Le MEILLEUR usage que vous puissiez en faire, c'est de ne pas y ajouter foi.
--	---

298. The least, *le moindre*.

<i>He heeds the slightest misfortune that befalls him.</i>	Il s'inquiète du MOINDRE mal qui puisse lui arriver.
--	---

299. The only, *le seul*.

<i>Although he were the only friend he had.</i>	Quoiqu'il fût le SEUL ami qu'il ait eu.
---	--

EXCLAMATIONS WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

300. God forbid that, *à Dieu ne plaise que*.

<i>God forbid that I should ever consent to commit so base an act!</i>	À DIEU NE PLAISE QUE je consente jamais à faire une telle bassesse!
--	---

301. God grant that, *Dieu fasse que*.

<i>God grant they may rest in peace!</i>	DIEU FASSE QU'elles reposent en paix!
--	--

[R. 289] { *These are clothes which I can wear indoors.*
 { Voici des vêtements **QUE** je puis porter à la maison.

[R. 290] { *That is the author who has made use of that expression.*
 { 'est là l'auteur **QUI** s'est servi de cette expression.

302. May God grant that, *Dieu veuille que.*
May God grant that it be so! | DIEU VEUILLE QUE cela soit ainsi!
303. Would to God that, *Plût à Dieu que.*
Would to God he were punished for his | PLÛT À DIEU qu'il fût puni de son
hypocrisy. | hypocrisie.

[COLUMNS 9, 11, 15, 17.]

THE ADVERB.

304. Harmony, style, and in many cases the meaning of the adverb, decide where this word is to be placed.

The number of the Column in which the adverb is to appear is given in the Vocabulary; in Paradigm No. 1 adverbs printed in italics, denote that their place in the sentence occasionally varies.

305. Some adverbs with various meanings do not always occupy the same place:

BIEN [well]	<i>She was always well dressed.</i>	Elle était toujours bien mise.
	<i>Be ever anxious to do well.</i>	Aie sans cesse le désir de bien faire.
	<i>She has learnt to dance well.</i>	Elle a appris à bien danser.
BIEN [very]	<i>She has learnt to dance very gracefully.</i>	Elle a appris à danser bien gracieusement.
BIEN [indeed]	<i>Indeed she has learnt to dance.</i>	Elle a bien appris à danser.
BIEN [much]	<i>He has eaten much.</i>	Il a bien mangé.
BIEN [at least]	<i>He has eaten at least a dozen.</i>	Il a mangé bien une douzaine.
BIEN [very much]	<i>We have had very much to put up with.</i>	Nous avons eu bien à souffrir.
BIEN [about]	<i>It is about twenty years since.</i>	Il y a bien vingt ans de cela.
ENCORE [as yet]	<i>I have never heard it mentioned as yet.</i>	Je n'en ai encore jamais entendu parler.
ENCORE [yet]	<i>I have not yet heard it mentioned.</i>	Je n'en ai pas encore entendu parler.
ENCORE [more]	<i>Give it time to grow more.</i>	Laissez-lui le temps de croître encore.

ENCORE [at least]	<i>At least if he would but take the trouble to...</i>	<i>Encore</i> s'il voulait se donner la peine de...
ENCORE [even]	<i>Not only is he liberal, but even prodigal.</i>	Non seulement il est libéral, mais <i>encore</i> il est prodigue.
ENCORE [moreover]	<i>I am moreover entrusted with the care of...</i>	On me charge <i>encore</i> du soin de... 15
JAMAIS [ever]	<i>Did you ever see anything like it?</i>	Avez-vous <i>jamais</i> rien vu de pareil? 10 12
JAMAIS [never]	<i>Did you never see anything like it?</i>	N'avez-vous <i>jamais</i> rien vu de pareil? 10
TOUJOURS [still]	<i>Still she has not arrived.</i>	<i>Toujours</i> est-il qu'elle n'est pas arrivée.
TOUJOURS [however]	<i>I have, however, not thought it.</i>	Je n'y ai <i>toujours</i> pas songé. 9
TOUJOURS [always]	<i>I have not always thought of it.</i>	Je n'y ai pas <i>toujours</i> songé. 11

No. 6.—Paradigm illustrative of the

VARIABLE.

[CONJUGATED]	
Without an AUXILIARY VERB, or used as a QUALIFICATIVE.	1. Quoique mortes, on ne les oublie pas. [Although they are dead, they are not forgotten.]
In the case of : <i>ci-inclus</i> , herein enclosed. <i>ci-joint</i> , annexed, subjoined. <i>excepté</i> , excepted. <i>non compris</i> , not included. <i>ouï</i> , having been heard. <i>passé</i> , past. <i>supposé</i> , being considered. <i>y compris</i> , included.	2. Veuillez remarquer d'après LES LETTRES <i>ci-jointes</i> . [Please observe from the annexed correspondence.] LEURS SŒURS et LES MIENNES <i>exceptées</i> . [Their sisters and mine excepted.]
Coming after the Substantive or the Pronoun.	4. Elles furent toujours aimées et chéries. [They were always beloved and cherished.]
[CONJUGATED]	
With the Auxiliary Verb ÊTRE.	

No. 5.—Paradigm on the Sequence of Tenses, or the Agreement of the Simple and Compound Tenses of the Indicative, the Conditional, the Imperative, and the Infinitive Mood, contained in the Principal Clause, with those of the Subjunctive Mood in the Subordinate Clause.

PRINCIPAL CLAUSE.				CONNECTIVE CONJUNCTION.	SUBORDINATE CLAUSE.					EQUIVALENTS IN ENGLISH.
MOODS.	Tenses.				Subjunctive Mood.					
	NAMES.	SIMPLE.	COMPOUND.		PRESENT. 1.	FUTURE. 2.	IMPERFECT. 3.	PRETERITE. 4.	PLUPERFECT. 5.	
Indicative.	I.—PRESENT	IL FAUT ... Je DOUTE ... IL NE CROIT PAS ... Nous NE PENSONS PAS ... Elles IGNORENT ...	... ... ... ... ...	que qu' que que que	je fasse il sorte nous écrivissions ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous soyez guéri ...	... ... ... ... tu eusses attendu ...	I must do. I am to do. I have to do. I doubt if he will go out. He does not believe what we wrote.
	II.—PAST INDEFINITE	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	que qu' que que qu'	... ... nous soyons vous restiez ...	... ... ... ... tu partisses ...	... ... ... ... vous ne soyez payé ...	... ... ... ... ils fussent loués ...	We do not think you have recovered. They are not aware of your having waited. He has requested us to be... They insisted on your remaining. They wished that you should start. I did prevent you from being paid. We allowed them to be praised.
	III.—IMPERFECT	Je NE ME DOU- TAIS PAS ... Nous IGNORIONS	qu' qu' que elles lussent ils fussent revenus ...	I did not suspect they were reading. We were not aware of their having returned. She had been longing for us to play.
	IV.—PLUPERFECT	que qu' qu' qu' pourque nous jouassions ils n'arrivassent ? je fusse admis	Had you given orders for us to be obeyed ? Were you afraid lest they would arrive ? He insisted on my being admitted.
Conditional.	V.—PRETERITE ANTERIOR	CRAIGNIS-TU IL INSISTA	que que	... tu travailles ?	It had been necessary for us to walk. I'll tell you that you are working ?
	VI.—PRETERITE ANTERIOR	IL EUT FALLU	que que nous eussions marché	I shall never believe them to be capable of.
	VII.—FUTURE	CROIRA-t-on Je NE PENSERAI JAMAIS ... Nous REGRET- TERONS ... IL SERA CHARMÉ	... ... ... ... ...	que qu' que que que	... ... ils sachent vous fussiez ...	... ... ... ... vous ayez réussi ...	... ... ... ... vous n'ayez pas reçu	... ... ... ... ...	We shall regret if you should be... He will be delighted at your having succeeded. He will have wanted me to do... We shall have dreaded your not having received...
	VIII.—FUTURE ANTERIOR	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	I should not be certain as to his knowing. We should doubt her coming. Would you have us sing ?
Imperative.	IX.—PRESENT	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	They would be astonished at your having dined. I should have desired them to come. Would you not have wished him to be elected ? It would have been better for you not to do... It would have been impossible for us to have related.
	X.—PAST	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	Do not be afraid of my forgetting. Let us hope that he will succeed. Do not believe that we came. Let us wish that they may have won. Let us suppose that such had been the case.
	XI.—PRESENT OR FUTURE	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	To consent to your nominating. To apprehend that it will rain. To object to my travelling. To deny that they have worked.
	XII.—PRESENT	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	Not caring whether you had gone, To have wished that he might be absent Having feared our being rewarded.
Infinitive.	XIII.—PAST	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	To have prevented my having studied. Granting that I inquire. Being willing that you should return.
	XIV.—PARTICIPLE PRESENT	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	Not knowing whether you were enjoying yourselves. Regretting that you have omitted. Not being aware of our arrival.
	XV.—PARTICIPLE PAST	Je N'ASSURE- RAIS PAS ... Nous DOUTERIONS ... VOUDRIEZ-VOUS ... ON S'ÉTONNE- RAIT	... ... ... ... ...	qu' qu' qu' qu' que	... il sache elle vienne nous chantassions ? ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... ...	... ... ... ... vous eussiez diné	Incensed at his slandering. Supposing we go. Being delighted that you would obtain. Being vexed at her having said. Being delighted that you should have understood.

306. Adverbs formed from adjectives are generally placed in Col. 15 or in Col. 17.

We should have acted more prudently.

Nous aurions agi plus *prudemment*.

We ought to have acted more prudently.

Nous aurions dû agir plus *prudemment*.

The greater part of adverbs whose place is given in Col. 15 are most frequently placed in Col. 17 after the verb in the Infinitive Mood.

[COLUMN 13.]

THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

307. The agreement of the participle past takes place, whenever the auxiliary *avoir* or *être* is preceded by one of the personal pronouns in the accusative case [Col. 4], i.e., *me, te, se, nous, vous, se, le, la, les*, or the relative pronoun *que* referring to an antecedent.

308. The agreement does not take place whenever it is preceded *only* by one of the personal pronouns in the dative case [Col. 3 and 5], *me, te, se, nous, vous, se, lui, leur*.

The rules on the agreement of the participle past, and the exceptions which accompany them, are to be learnt in accordance with the ordinal arrangement of the subjoined Paradigm.

Agreement of the Participle Past.

INVARIABLE.

WITHOUT AUXILIARY.]

3.

In the case of :

attendu, whereas.

i-in, sus, herewith.

ci-joint, herewith enclosed.

excepté, except.

non compris, excluding.

ouï, having heard.

passé, being past.

supposé, supposing.

en, considering.

y compris, including.

Used as Prepositions before the Substantive.

Vous recevrez *ci-joint* LES LETTRES de mes filles.

[Herewith you will receive my daughters' letters.]

Excepté LEURS SŒURS et LES MIENNES.

[Except their sisters and mine.]

WITH ÊTRE.]

5.

After the *Oratorical vous*,
or the *Complimentary vous*.

Nous sommes *enchante* de vous retrouver.

[I am delighted at meeting you once more.]

Y êtes-vous toujours bien accueilli ?

[Do they still welcome you ?]

No. 6.—*Continued.*]

VARIABLE.

[CONJUGATED

6.

In the Compound Tenses of a
REFLEXIVE VERB,
and preceded by a Pronoun in the
ACCUSATIVE CASE.

Nous nous sommes adressés à lui maintes
4 fois.
[We have applied to him many a time.]

8.

In the Compound Tenses of a
REFLEXIVE VERB,
preceded by a Pronoun in the
DATIVE CASE,
and a Pronoun in the
ACCUSATIVE CASE.

Nous nous LES sommes souvent adressées.
1 3 4
[We have often addressed them to each
other.]

10.

In the Compound Tenses of a
REFLEXIVE VERB,
preceded by the Relative Pronoun QUE,
relating to its ANTECEDENT.

Les lettres QUE nous nous sommes écrites.
1 3
[The letters which we have written to each
other.]

[CONJUGATED

13.

Preceded by a Pronoun in the
ACCUSATIVE CASE.

Nous LES avons envoyés en France.
4
[We sent them to France.]
Je ne LA lui aurais pas remise.
4 5
[I should not have handed it over to him.]

15.

Preceded by the Relative Pronoun QUE,
relating to its ANTECEDENT.

Tous les amis QUE j'avais invités.
[All the friends I had invited.]

16.

Preceded by the *Indefinite Adjective*
QUEL, and a *Substantive* being the
ACCUSATIVE CASE of a *Transitive*
Verb.

QUELLE MÉTHODE a-t-il suivie?
[What method did he follow?]

18.

Preceded by the *Interrogative Adverb*
COMBIEN DE [how many?], and a
Substantive, used as the ACCUSATIVE
CASE of a *Transitive Verb*.

COMBIEN D'EXERCICES a-t-il transcrits?
[How many exercises did he write out?]

INVARIABLE.

WITH ÊTRE.]

In the Compound Tenses of a
REFLEXIVE VERB,
and preceded by a Pronoun in the
DATIVE CASE.

7.

Nous *nous* sommes *écrit* plus d'une fois.

³
[We have more than once written to each other.]

In the Compound Tenses of a
REFLEXIVE VERB,
preceded by a Pronoun in the
DATIVE CASE,
and followed by an
ACCUSATIVE CASE.

9.

Nous *nous* y sommes *adressé des lettres*.

³
[We used to address letters to each other there.]

In the Compound Tenses of:

s'arroger.
se complaire.
se contempler.
se défaire.
s'imaginer.
se nuire.

se plaire.
se ressembler.
se sourire.
se succéder.
se suffire.

and a few others formed from an
INTRANSITIVE VERB.

11.

Pourquoi *se* seraient-elles *nui*?

³
[Why should they have wronged each other?]

WITH AVOIR.]

Not preceded by the ACCUSATIVE CASE.

12.

Nous avons *envoyé ces livres* à Paris.

[We sent those books to Paris.]

Preceded only by a Pronoun in the
DATIVE CASE.

14.

Nous *leur* avons *envoyé des cadeaux*.

⁵
[We sent them presents.]
Elles *lui* auraient *remis* nos plumes.

⁵
[They would have handed our pens over to him.]

Preceded by the *Indefinite Adjective*
QUEL, and a *Substantive* being the
subject of an *Intransitive Verb*.

17.

QUELS *candidats* ont *passé*?

[Which candidates have passed?]

Preceded by the *Interrogative Adverb*
COMBIEN or [how many?], and a
Substantive, used as the Subject of
an *Intransitive Verb*.

19.

COMBIEN *de matchets* ont *été*?

[How many swords were wanted?]

No. 6.—*Continued.*] VARIABLE.

[CONJUGATED

20.

Preceded by the *Exclamatory Adverb* QUE DE [how many !], and a *Substantive*, used as the ACCUSATIVE CASE of a *Transitive Verb*.

QUE d'ERREURS il a faites !
[What a number of mistakes he has made !]

22.

Followed by an INFINITIVE; the *Relative Pronoun* QUE, or the *Accusative Case* relating to the *Participle*.

Les femmes QUE j'ai vues danser.
[The women whom I saw dancing.]
Ces oiseaux-là, je LES ai vus nourrir.
[Those birds, I saw them feed.]

24.

Followed by a PREPOSITION and an *Infinitive*; the ACCUSATIVE CASE relating to the *Participle*.

Leurs dépenses LES ont empêchés d'économiser.
[Their expenditure prevented them from saving.]

26.

In the case of the Participles of AVOIR and DONNER, followed by a *Preposition* and an *Infinitive*.

Les éditions QUE vous lui avez données à parcourir.
[The editions you gave him to peruse.]

INVARIABLE.

WITH AVOIR.]

Preceded by the *Exclamatory Adverb* of *How many* !, and a *Substantive*, used as the *SUBJECT* of an *Intransitive Verb*.

21.

QUE DE pères ont survécu à leurs enfants !
[How many fathers have survived their children !]

23.

Followed by an *Infinitive* ; the *Relative Pronoun* *que*, or the *Accusative Case* relating to the *Infinitive*.

Les valse^s QUE je leur ai VU DANCER.
[The waltzes I have seen them dance.]
Ces oiseaux-là, je LES ai VU NOURRIR.
[These birds, I saw them being fed.]

25.

Followed by a *Preposition* and an *Infinitive* ; the *ACCUSATIVE CASE* relating to the *Infinitive*.

Les maisons qu'ils m'ont prié de vendre.
[The houses which they requested me to sell.]

27.

With the *Participle past* of :

compter [to intend] | *faire* [to make]
croire [to believe] | *oser* [to venture]
espérer [to expect] | *savoir* [to know]
followed by an *Infinitive*.

On les a FAIT sortir de la salle.
[They were ordered to leave the meeting.]
Les lettres que nous avions COMPTÉ écrire.
[The letters we had intended to write.]

28.

With the ellipsis of an *Infinitive*, after :

cru, thought.
dû, been obliged.
permis, allowed.
pu, been able.
sû, known.
voulu, wished.

Elles nous ont rendu tous les services
qu'elles ont PU [nous rendre.]
[They have rendered us all the service they could.]

29.

In the case of the *Participle* of an *VERB IMPERSONAL*, either by nature or accident.

Quels avantages en est-il RÉSULTÉ ?
[What advantages were derived from it ?]

30.

Preceded by the *Neutral & Expectative* (*il*).

Ils sont plus heureux que nous ne l'avions
supposé.
[They are happier than we expected.]

31.

Followed by the *Conjunction* *que* and a verb used as an *ALTERNATIVE CASE*.

Une robe qu'elle avait cru qu'on admirerait.
[A dress which she fancied would be admired.]

No. 6.—*Continued.* VARIABLE.

[CONJUGATED

32.

Preceded by the Relative Pronoun QUE
and by the Pronoun EN in the
GENITIVE CASE.

Quelques mauvais traitements QUE j'EN
ai eus.
[Whatever shameful treatment I received
at their hands.]

34.

Preceded by the Pronoun EN and an
Adverb of Quantity.

Combien n'EN a-t-il pas mangés !
[How many did he not eat of them !]

36.

With the Participles of COURIR [to be ex-
posed to], COÛTER [to give, to occa-
sion], PESER [to ascertain the weight
of, to examine], VALOIR [to procure],
in their figurative meaning.

Les peines QUE cette entreprise lui a
coûtées.
[The trouble which that undertaking has
given him.]
Les honneurs QUE cet ouvrage lui aurait
valués.
[The distinction which that work would
have procured for him.]

38.

After LE PEU DE, implying *the small*
amount of, the few.

Le peu de soins QUE le malade y a eus.
[The little care the patient met with.]

[COLUMN 16.]

THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

309. The majority of French verbs govern the Infinitive Mood by means of the prepositions *de, à* ; some require another preposition ; a few only govern the Infinitive Mood without the aid of any preposition :

We do not by any means intend doing
that.

I undertook to reward those pupils.

She has not forgiven you for having
written that note to them.

Nous ne COMPTONS nullement *faire*
cela.

Je me suis ENGAGÉ à récompenser ces
élèves.

Elle ne vous a pas PARDONNÉ DE
leur avoir écrit ce billet.

INVARIABLE.

WITH AVOIR.]

33.

Preceded by the Pronoun EN in the
GENITIVE CASE.

Personne ne m'*EN* a *envoyé*.
[Nobody has sent me any of them.]

35.

Preceded by the Pronoun EN and followed
by an ADVERB OF QUANTITY.

Elles *EN* ont mangé *bien plus*.
[They ate a great many more of them.]

37.

With the Participles of
courir, to run.
coûter, to cost.
peser, to weigh.
valoir, to be worth,
in their literal meaning.

Les sommes énormes *que* cette entreprise
lui a *coûté*.
[The fabulous sum of money which that
undertaking cost him.]
Les cinq mille livres *que* cet ouvrage a *valu*.
[The £5000 which that work was worth.]

39.

After *le peu de*, implying total want of.

Leur *PEU DE* soins a *causé* sa mort.
[Want of care on their part was the
cause of his death.]

40.

After *QUE* in the sense of DURING WHICH,
and as much used as an
INDEFINITE OBJECTIVE.

Les maintes années *qu'a régné* la reine.
[The many years the Queen has reigned.]
Les jours et les nuits *qu'elles* ont tant
souffert.
[The days and nights they suffered so much.]

310. Whereas some English verbs govern various prepositions, and others are often followed by the Incomplete Participle of the verb, their French equivalents invariably govern the Infinitive. EN is the only preposition which governs the Participle Present :

May I ask you to sit down?

Puis-je vous *demande* DE vous
asseoir?

I have invited him to supper.

Je l'ai *demandé* À *souper*.

We were tired with running.

Nous étions *fatigués* DE *courir*.

I told him in passing.

Je le lui ai dit *EN passant*.

LIST OF ENGLISH VERBS WITH THE PREPOSITION (IF ANY) WHICH THEIR FRENCH EQUIVALENTS GOVERN BEFORE THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

Abet , encourager à, provoquer à.	be diffident , se défier de, hésiter à.	be unable , ne pouvoir, ne pas être à même de.
abstain , s'abstenir de ; (<i>not to</i>), ne pas laisser de.	be disposed , être disposé à.	be under the apprehension , appréhender de.
accuse , accuser de.	be eager , s'empresser à, être empressé de.	be willing , vouloir.
— o. s. , s'accuser de.	be engaged , être engagé à, être à, s'occuper de.	be worn out , se consumer à.
accustom , accoutumer à, habituer à.	be fain , désirer, souhaiter, être obligé de.	bear , souffrir de.
— o. s. , s'accoutumer à, s'habituer à.	be far from , être loin de.	bear in mind , se souvenir de.
acknowledge , reconnaître.	be fond , aimer à, tenir à.	become (<i>ill become any one</i>), avoir mauvaise grâce à.
acquiesce , consentir à.	be good enough , avoir la complaisance de, daigner.	beg , prier de.
advise , conseiller de, recommander de.	be happy , être heureux de, avoir le bonheur de.	begin , se mettre à, se prendre à.
agree , consentir à, s'accorder à.	be implacable , s'acharner à.	— (<i>with progress</i>), commencer à.
— (<i>as to</i>), convenir de (être).	be in a hurry , se presser de.	— (<i>without continuation</i>), commencer de.
aim , travailler à, tâcher à, viser à.	be inclined , être disposé à, pencher à.	believe , croire.
allow , permettre de, admettre à.	be indignant , s'indigner de.	belong (impers.), appartenir de (impers.).
appear , avoir l'air de, paraître.	be in vain (impers.) avoir beau (not impers.).	beseech , implorer de, supplier de.
apply o. s. , s'appliquer à, s'occuper de, se vouer à.	be in want of , avoir besoin de.	blame , blâmer de.
apprehend , appréhender de.	be loath , il me répugne de, avoir la répugnance de, ne pas avoir envie de.	blush , rougir de.
ask (<i>invite</i>), demander à.	be long in , tarder à, tarder de.	boast , se vanter de, se faire gloire de, se piquer de, se glorifier de.
— (<i>question</i>), demander de.	be longing , être impatient de.	bring up , instruire, à dresser à.
— (<i>permission</i>), demander la permission de.	be more advisable , valoir mieux.	Call to mind , se rappeler de, se souvenir de.
aspire , ambitionner de, aspirer à.	be most anxious , brûler de, désirer ardemment.	call upon (<i>summon</i>), sommer de.
assist , aider à.	be much amused , se divertir à.	care (<i>attachment</i>), tenir à.
attempt , essayer de, à ; tenter de.	be necessary , falloir, il est nécessaire de.	cause , faire, obliger à.
avoid , éviter de.	be obliged , falloir (<i>with dative pronoun</i>), avoir à, devoir.	cease , cesser de.
authorize , autoriser à.	be obstinate , s'obstiner à, s'entêter de.	— (<i>negatively</i>), ne faire que, ne cesser de.
Be (<i>incessantly</i>), être toujours à.	be obstinately bent upon , s'obstiner à.	censure , blâmer de.
be able , pouvoir, avoir la liberté de, être à même de.	be occupied , s'occuper à.	challenge , défier à.
be about , être sur le point de.	be painful , en coûter de (impers.).	claim , prétendre.
be accustomed , être accoutumé à, être habitué à, avoir coutume de, avoir l'habitude de.	be permitted , avoir la faculté de.	come and , venir.
be admitted , être admis à.	be preferable , valoir mieux.	— to (<i>lead</i>), aboutir à.
be afraid , avoir peur de, craindre de.	be repugnant , il répugne de (impers.).	— (<i>with the intention of doing</i>), venir pour.
be amazed , s'étonner de.	be resigned , se résigner de.	command , commander de.
be ashamed , avoir honte de.	be satisfied , se contenter de.	commence (<i>continuous progress</i>), commencer à.
be astonished , s'étonner de.	be skilful , s'entendre à.	— (<i>momentary duration</i>), commencer de.
be at liberty , être libre de.	be slow in , tarder à, de.	compel , forcer à, de ; réduire à, obliger à, contraindre à, de.
be bent upon , se déterminer à.	be studious to , s'étudier à.	complain , se plaindre de.
be better , valoir mieux, il est préférable de.	be sufficient (impers.), il suffit de (impers.).	comply , se soumettre à.
be busy , s'occuper à, être à.	be the question , il s'agit de (impers.).	concur , concourir à.
be careful , avoir soin de, n'avoir garde de.	be thinking of , penser.	condemn , condamner à.
be delighted , se plaire à, être charmé de.	be thoroughly conversant , s'entendre à.	— o. s. , se condamner à.
be determined , résoudre (avoir), se déterminer à.		condescend , vouloir, daigner.
		conduce , servir à.
		confine o. s. , se borner à.

congratulate, féliciter de, s'applaudir de.

consent (*not to mind*), consentir de.

consent (*to acquiesce*), consentir à.

consist, consister à.

conspire, conspirer à.

constrain, contraindre à, de.

contemplate, méditer de.

continue (*with interruption*), continuer de.

— (*persistently*), continuer à.

contribute in, contribuer à.

— to, tendre à.

co-operate, concourir à.

cost (impers.), coûter à.

Dare, oser.

decide, se décider à.

defer, différer de.

defy, défier de.

delay, tarder à, de; différer de.

delight in, se complaire à, se plaire à.

deny, nier de.

depend on a. o., to (impers.), tenir à de, dépendre de... de (impers.).

deserve, mériter de.

determine, se résoudre à.

detest, détester de, haïr de.

direct, prescrire de.

discontinue, discontinuer de.

disdain, dédaigner de.

dislike, ne pas aimer, haïr de.

dispair, désespérer de.

disregard, dédaigner de.

distrust, se défier de, se méfier de.

dread, craindre de, redouter de.

drive at, viser à.

Employ in, employer à.

endeavour, essayer de, à; tenter de, chercher à.

end in, by, about, à, pour par.

encourage, encourager à.

engage, engager à, se soumettre à.

— o. a., s'engager à.

entreat, supplier de, supplier de.

— a. o. with the care of, laisser à, confier de.

exalt in, se glorifier de.

excel in, exceller à.

exert o. a., s'évertuer à.

exhort, exhorter à.

exonerate o. a., se disculper de.

expect, s'attendre à, espérer de, espérer.

expose o. a., exposer à.

Fail in (*want of duty*), manquer à.

— to (*omission*), manquer de.

fancy, s'imaginer, penser.

fear, craindre de, appréhender de.

feel, sentir.

feel grateful for, to a. o., savoir gré à... de.

feel reluctant (*unwilling*), répaquer à.

finish, achever de, finir de.

flatter o. a., se flatter de, penser.

forbear, se garder de.

forbid, défendre de.

force, forcer de, à.

forget, oublier de, à.

forgive, pardonner de.

Get accustomed, s'habituer à, se faire à.

get ready for, se préparer à, s'apprêter à.

give, donner à.

give notice to (*inform*), avertir de.

give cause, donner sujet à.

give o. a. up, se vouer à.

give up, renoncer à.

glory in, se faire gloire de, se glorifier de, mettre sa gloire à.

go, } aller.

go and, } aller.

grieve, s'affliger de.

groan, gémir de.

grow tired, se fatiguer à.

grow weary, se lasser de.

Happen, arriver de (impers.), venir à.

hasten, s'empresse de, se hâter de.

hate, haïr à.

have a good mind, avoir envie de.

have but to, n'avoir qu'à.

have just done (*a thing*), venir de, ne faire que de.

have pleasure, avoir du plaisir à.

have difficulty, } avoir de la

have trouble, } peine à.

have the patience, avoir la patience de.

have the pleasure, avoir le plaisir de.

have the trouble, avoir la peine de.

have to, devoir, il me faut, avoir à.

hazard, hasarder de.

hear, entendre.

heed, not to, se garder de.

help, aider à.

help (*not to be able to*), ne pouvoir manquer de.

hesitate, hésiter à, de; balancer à.

hope, espérer, espérer de.

Impel, inciter à.

implore, implorer de.

invite, encourager à, inviter à.

induce, engager à.

inspire, inspirer de.

instigate, inciter à.

intend, compter, se proposer de, avoir l'intention de, penser, songer à, prétendre, entendre.

interest, intéresser à.

inure, s'habituer à, aguerrir à.

invite, prier de, convier à, inviter à.

— (*to meals*), inviter à, prier à, demander à.

Know how to, savoir.

Laugh at, rire de.

lay a claim, prétendre à.

lay o. s. open to, s'exposer à.

learn, apprendre à.

leave, } laisser.

let, } laisser.

like, aimer à, de.

limit, borner à.

limit o. a., se borner à.

loathe, il me répugne de, haïr à.

long, désirer, avoir bien envie de, être impatient de.

look (*in appearance*), avoir l'air de.

look (*cross*), réchigner à.

love, aimer à, se plaire à.

lower o. a., s'abaisser à.

Make, faire.

— an apology for, s'excuser de.

— an effort, s'efforcer à.

— a point of, se faire un devoir de.

— bold to, s'enghardir à.

— up one's mind, se décider à, se résoudre à, résoudre de.

mean, avoir l'intention de, prétendre, entendre.

meddle with, s'ingérer de.

mind, not to, se garder de.

mistrust, se défier de.

miss, manquer à.

Neglect, négliger de.

Oblige, obliger à, de.

occupy o. a., se mettre à, s'employer à, occuper de.

omit, omettre de.
order, donner ordre de, ordonner de, commander de.

Pass in, passer à.
permit, permettre de, admettre à.
persevere, persévérer à.
persist, persister à, persévérer à, s'entêter à, s'abstenir à.
persuade o. s., se résoudre à, se persuader de.
pique o. s., se piquer de.
pity...for, plaindre de.
pledge o. s., s'engager à.
prefer, aimer mieux, préférer de, préférer.
prepare, préparer à, apporter a, se disposer à.
—— o. s., se préparer à.
prescribe, prescrire de.
pretend (*lay claim*), prétendre à.

—— (*sham*), prétendre, feindre de.
prevent, empêcher de.
profess, faire profession de.
promise, promettre de.
promise o. s., se promettre de, se vouer à.
prompt, inspirer de.
propose, proposer de.
provoke, provoquer à.
punish for, punir de.
purpose, se proposer de, avoir l'intention de, songer à.
put off, différer de.
put off with, souffrir de.

Recollect, se rappeler, se rappeler de, se ressouvenir de.
recommend, recommander de.
reduce, réduire à.
refrain from, se garder de, renoncer à.
refuse, refuser de.
regret, regretter de.
—— somehow, avoir du regret de.
rejoice, se réjouir de.
relinquish, renoncer à.

remember, se rappeler, se rappeler de, se souvenir de.
renounce, renoncer à.
repent, se repentir de.
reproach o. s. for, se reprocher de.
request, prier de.
require, avoir besoin de, demander à... de.
resign o. s., se résigner à.
resolve, se résoudre à, résoudre de (avoir).
resolve on, se permettre de.
risk, hasarder de, risquer de, manquer de.
ruin o. s., se ruiner à, se consumer à.
run the chance of, risquer de.
run the risk, manquer de.

Scorn, dédaigner de.
season, aguerrir à.
see, voir.
seek, chercher à.
seem to, sembler, avoir l'air de.
set about, se mettre à.
sham, prétendre, feindre de.
shudder, frémir de.
spend, passer à.
stimulate, exciter à.
strive, faire des efforts pour, travailler à, s'efforcer de, tâcher à.
stoop, s'humilier à, se plier à.
stop, cesser de, discontinuer de.
subject, assujettir à.
—— o. s., s'assujettir à.
submit, se résigner à, se soumettre à.
subpoena, assigner à.
succeed in, réussir à, parvenir à.
—— eventually, finir par.
suffer (*physically*), souffrir à.
—— (*morally*), souffrir de.
summon, sommer de, assigner à.
suspect of, soupçonner de.
swear, jurer de.

Take a pride in, s'enorgueillir de, se piquer de.

take care to, avoir soin de, prendre garde de.
take care not to, n'avoir garde de, se garder de.
take delight in, se réjouir de, se complaire à.
take into one's head to, s'aviser de.
take pleasure in, se plaire à.
take pride in, se faire gloire de.
take the liberty, prendre la liberté de, se permettre de.
take the trouble, se donner la peine de.
take upon o. s., se charger de.
talk, parler de.
teach, enseigner à, instruire à, montrer à.
tell, dire de.
tempt, tenter de, inciter à.
think of, songer à, penser à, s'occuper de, penser.
threaten, menacer de.
tire, se fatiguer à, se lasser de.
tolerate, permettre de.
train, instruire à.
train up, dresser à.
tremble, frémir de, trembler de.
trouble o. s., se mêler de.
try, s'efforcer de, essayer de, à ; tâcher de, à.

Understand how to, s'entendre à.
undertake, s'engager à, entreprendre de.
urge on, presser de, exciter à.
Venture, prendre la liberté de, oser, hasarder de.

Warn, avertir de, prévenir de.
waste one's life, se consumer à.
—— one's time, perdre son temps à.
wear o. s. out, se fatiguer à.
wish, vouloir, désirer (*with probable success*), désirer de (*with improbable success*), souhaiter, souhaiter de.
—— earnestly, brûler de.

[COLUMNS 18, 19, 20, 21.]

DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

311. Disjunctive Personal Pronouns are used instead of the English Conjunctive Pronouns.

(i.) In reply to questions :

Who called this morning? He, she, they.

Qui est venu ce matin? LUI, ELLE, EUX.

(ii.) In exclamations :

*I commit a cowardly act !
They will abandon you !*

MOI, faire une lâcheté !
EUX vous abandonner !

(iii.) In comparisons after *as*, like [*comme*], *than* [*que*] :

Why do you not do as I do ?

Pourquoi ne faites-vous pas comme
MOI ?

Why not do as I do ?

Que ne faites-vous comme MOI !

She was much taller than he.

Elle était bien plus grande que LUI.

(iv.) After the verb *it is*, in its various forms :

It is I who told him so.

C'est MOI qui le lui dis.

It was to us that he applied.

Ce fut à NOUS qu'il s'adressa.

It is they who are offended.

Ce sont ELLES qui se sont formalisées.

(v.) When joined by means of the Conjunctions *and* [*et*], *nor*, *neither* [*ni*], or [*ou*] :

His daughters, he, and I.

Ses filles, LUI et MOI.

Neither he nor she.

Ni LUI, ni ELLE.

They and we are friends.

EUX et NOUS, nous sommes amis.

(vi.) In the case of English Conjunctive Pronouns being used in the *Nominative Case*, and immediately followed by the *Participle Incomplete* :

They having thought so.

EUX ayant pensé cela.

(vii.) When followed by the Pronouns *who* [*qui*], *whom* [*que*] :

I who often talk to them.

MOI qui leur parle souvent.

They whom you blame.

EUX que vous blâmez.

(viii.) When they are immediately followed by the word *alone* [*seul*] :

I maintain that he alone can have said so.

Je maintiens que LUI seul peut avoir dit cela.

(ix.) In emphatic assertions, or when used pleonastically :

I am going to Spain, while they are in Switzerland.

MOI je vais en Espagne, tandis qu'EUX sont en Suisse.

You! you know nothing about it.

TOI ! tu n'en sais rien.

312. They are used as in English :

(i.) After the Reflexive verbs conjugated with a Pronoun in the *Accusative Case* [*le, la, les* being excepted], as given in Column 4 of Paradigm No. 1 :

We have complained of them.

Nous nous sommes plaints d'EUX.

(ii.) When more than one Pronoun in the Accusative or Dative Case, connected by a Conjunction, is expressed :

I have seen you and him.

Je vous ai vus, VOUS et LUI.

She wrote neither to them nor to her.

Elle n'a écrit ni à EUX ni à ELLE.

(iii.) After Prepositions :

We never called at his house.

Nous n'avons jamais passé CHEZ LUI.

They could do it without us.

Ils savaient le faire SANS NOUS.

(iv.) When joined to the word *self* [même], *selves* [mêmes], by means of a hyphen :

We heard it ourselves.

| Nous l'avons entendu NOUS-MÊMES.

(v.) Of Pronouns of the first and second persons :

They were afraid of me.

| Ils avaient peur DE MOI.

She mentioned you.

| Elle a parlé DE VOUS.

Those of the third person may also be expressed by the Conjunctive Pronoun *en*, provided no equivocal meaning arise :

They were afraid of them.

| (Ils avaient peur D'EN X.

| (Ils EN avaient peur.

| (Elle a parlé d'eux.

| (Elle EN a parlé.

She has mentioned them.

EXERCISES.

NOTE.—The subjoined Exercises are not meant to be written in their entirety out of class ; the second half is intended to be done in class under the tutor's guidance.

All Exercises which should be done by means of Paradigm No. 1. have appended to them the numbers of the columns, on which the several sentences are founded ; those on the Subjunctive Mood and Participle past, have reference to the Rules or Paradigms treating on these parts. Until Paradigm No. 1 has been learnt by heart, lines should be drawn on the paper previous to the Exercise being written, so as to facilitate its composition and correction. For instance, Ex. 23 [Col. 2. 3. 8. (1.) 10.] will require five columns, and each column will have to bear the numbers assigned :

TRANSLATION OF :

Sentence 1.

— 10.

— 16. Les enfants

2.	3.	8.	(1.)	10.
Ne	m'	écriraient-	ils	plus?
Ne	me	demandez-	vous	rien?
ne	vous	paraissent-	ils	jamais paresseux?

Words which are *italicized* in the Exercises are not to be translated.

Those which are [in brackets] must either be inserted in the French, or shew the word which is to be looked for in the Vocabulary or Dictionary, so as to secure the proper rendering of the word or phrase immediately preceding it.

Several words connected by a *hyphen*, indicate that one word is generally used to translate it, and in some instances, that a totally different phrase is used in French.

Under ordinary circumstances, ELEMENTARY CLASSES will find no difficulty in doing Ex. 1-76 ; JUNIOR CLASSES Ex. 1-96 ; SENIOR CLASSES Ex. 97-200. Teachers alone will be enabled to judge of the value of this suggestion.

The Exercises on *Inversion*, 137-148, may be given by way of *translation only* to the Junior Classes.

ON THE NEGATIONS, AND THE SIMPLE AND COMPOUND TENSES.

1. [On Col. 1. 8.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. The brother learns his lesson. | 12. Her brother-in-law will arrive. |
| 2. The sister forgets her work. | 13. His grand-daughter did sing. |
| 3. The friend is writing a letter. | 14. Her grandson was learning. |
| 4. The children are going to school. | 15. This man and that woman are friends. |
| 5. His niece was very pretty. | 16. Your sister-in-law would write. |
| 6. Her nephew was in London. | 17. That old house is mine. |
| 7. His mother will write. | 18. This old inkstand was yours. |
| 8. Her son would be glad. | 19. This child was my best pupil. |
| 9. My grandfather was here. | 20. She is intelligent. |
| 10. Your boys are doing their exercises. | 21. They [m. & f.] will be handsome. |
| 11. Their son-in-law is coming. | |

2. [On Col. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Does the brother finish his lesson? | 12. Will her brother-in-law arrive? |
| 2. Does your sister forget her books? | 13. Was his grand-daughter singing? |
| 3. Is his friend writing a letter? | 14. Did her grandson learn? |
| 4. Are the children going to the village? | 15. Are this man and that woman friends? |
| 5. Was his niece very quarrelsome? | 16. Would your sister-in-law write? |
| 6. Was her nephew in London? | 17. Are these old slippers yours? |
| 7. Will his grandmother write? | 18. Was this old inkstand theirs? |
| 8. Would her son be glad? | 19. Was this child your best pupil? |
| 9. Was your grandfather here? | 20. Is she intelligent? |
| 10. Are your boys doing their exercises? | 21. Will they [f.] be handsome or ugly? |
| 11. Is their son-in-law coming? | |

3. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Your eldest brother is not learning his lesson. | 12. Her brother-in-law will not arrive. |
| 2. His youngest sister does not forget her work. | 13. His grand-daughter used not to sing. |
| 3. My friend is not writing a letter. | 14. Her grandson did not learn. |
| 4. Those children do not go to school. | 15. They are not friends. |
| 5. Her nephew would be in London. | 16. Your sister-in-law would not write. |
| 6. Your mother will not be writing. | 17. That old house was not his. |
| 7. His nieces were not very envious. | 18. This old inkstand was not thine. |
| 8. His daughter would not be pleased. | 19. This girl was not his favourite pupil. |
| 9. Your grandfather will not come here. | 20. She was not unhappy. |
| 10. Your boys don't do their exercises. | 21. They [f.] need not to be obliging. |
| 11. Their son-in-law did not come. | |

4. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Is not your brother learning his lesson? | 10. Were not your boys doing their impositions? |
| 2. Does not his sister forget her work? | 11. Will not Robert come? |
| 3. Is not your friend writing letters? | 12. Does not their brother-in-law arrive? |
| 4. Do not her children go to school? | 13. Did not his grandfather sing? |
| 5. Were not her nieces very amiable? | 14. Did not her grandson learn? |
| 6. Would not her nephew be in London? | 15. Are they not friends? |
| 7. Will not your mother be writing? | 16. Would not your sister-in-law write? |
| 8. Would not their daughters be vexed? | 17. Was it [f.] not hers? |
| 9. Will not your grandfather go away? | 18. Was not this old inkstand ²⁰ mine? |
| | 19. Is not this girl his youngest pupil? |
| | 20. Was she not innocent? |

5. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Does your youngest brother never learn his lessons? | 10. Will their godson never come? |
| 2. Does his eldest sister never forget her work? | 11. Will they never arrive? |
| 3. Did your friend never write any letters? | 12. Did she never sing? |
| 4. Do those children never go to school? | 13. Did she never learn English? |
| 5. Was his niece never absent? | 14. Were they never friends? |
| 6. Were their nephews never in Germany? | 15. Did your sister-in-law never write? |
| 7. Will his mother never write? | 16. Were those old houses never theirs? |
| 8. Would her son never be satisfied? | 17. Were these old inkstands ²⁰ never mine? |
| 9. Do your boys never do their exercises? | 18. Was this child ²⁰ never your most attentive pupil? |
| | 19. Were those girls never intelligent? |

6. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Does he no longer learn his lesson? | 10. Will your parcels arrive no more? |
| 2. Do they no longer forget their work. | 11. Will not that family come any more? |
| 3. Does his friend write no more? | 12. Was she singing no longer? |
| 4. Do their children no longer go to school? | 13. Did he no longer learn Algebra? |
| 5. Was her nephew no longer in Australia? | 14. Were they no longer intimate friends? |
| 6. Will his mother write no more? | 15. Does your sister write no more? |
| 7. Would her son no longer be dull? | 16. Was that pretty cottage no longer yours? |
| 8. Was he no longer a partner of his? | 17. Was that workbox no longer hers? |
| 9. Do not your boys no longer do their exercises? | 18. Is this child no longer your best pupil? |
| | 19. Was she no longer industrious? |

7. [On Col. 1. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. His son has been learning Arithmetic. 2. Their children have forgotten the time. 3. My friend has written this poetry. 4. The servants have been to church. 5. We have been in Italy. 6. If you have been so good [wise]. 7. His aunt will have been writing. 8. I should have been very glad. 9. He has been here more than once. 10. They have been doing their exercises. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Her uncle will have [be] arrived. 12. He has been playing <i>on</i> [of] the piano. 13. She would have had <i>a</i> head-ache. 14. They have been doing their duty. 15. She would have written <i>the day</i> before yesterday. 16. That has been mine [<i>belonged to me</i>]. 17. We had overcome that difficulty. 18. He has been my best pupil. 19. If they had been less intelligent. 20. They [f.] will have been generous. |
|--|--|

8. [On Col. 8. (1.) 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Has his daughter been learning Geography? 2. Have the children forgotten their pencils? 3. Has my friend gathered those flowers? 4. Have the servants been to church? 5. Have you ever been in Belgium? 6. Have they been carrying fruit[pl.]? 7. Would his wife have died? 8. Would you have been in time? 9. Has he been here more than once? 10. Have they been learning the cornet? 11. Has [is] he come after you? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Will her husband have arrived? 13. Had his little girl been playing [of] the violin? 14. Have you had <i>a</i> head-ache? 15. Have they done their sums? 16. Would she have written last week? 17. Has it been yours [<i>belonged to you</i>]? 18. Had they overcome that difficulty? 19. Has she been in the country? 20. Will he have been more punctual? |
|--|---|

21

9. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. This boy has not learnt his lessons. 2. His sister has not forgotten her work. 3. My friend [f.] has not written this letter. 4. Her children have not gone to school. 5. His nieces have not been invited. 6. Her nephew would not have been in England. 7. His grandmother has not written. 8. His daughter would not have been pleased. 9. Your grandfather has not come by himself [alone]. 10. Our cousins did not learn the harmonium. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. His sons did not do that. 12. That fellow has not come yet. 13. His grand-daughter did nothing. 14. They have never learnt anything. 15. They have not been friends of late. 16. Your sister-in-law would not have written. 17. That old house was not sold. 18. Her inkstand has not been washed. 19. She has not arrived. 20. She has not answered [to] my letter. 21. They have never been very obliging. |
|--|--|

10. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Have you not been learning your lesson? 2. Did not your sister forget her needlework? 3. Did not your friend write out her exercise? 4. Have not the girls gone to church? 5. Have not my nieces been praised? 6. Has not that girl been in France? 7. Has he not gone out? 8. Would she not have disappeared? 9. Have not these boys been running? 10. Have not your cousins learnt the flute? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Has not your master come yet? 12. Did not your grand-daughter do that? 13. Did not they play the harp? 14. Have they not been friends? 15. Has she not written to you and to him?
20 16. Has she not been reading this book?
20 17. Had you not arrived then? 18. Did she not answer your last letter? 19. Have they not been obliging? |
|---|---|

11. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did you never learn that instrument? 2. Has she never forgotten the poor [pl.]? 3. Has your friend never been to church? 4. Have these children never been to school? 5. Have you never been invited, Miss? 6. Did they never write to their friends? 7. Were their exercises never corrected? 8. Did your brother never omit that? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Have your cousins [f.] never foreseen? 10. Would your sons never have avoided? 11. Has this book never been read? 12. Has she never made that mistake? 13. Have you never heard that? 14. Have they never been at variance? 15. Would you never have written that? 16. Has that house never been sold? 17. Has your sister never been believed? 18. Has she never answered your letter? 19. Have they never obliged their friends? |
|---|---|

12. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Have you no longer learnt that? 2. Has she no longer forgotten the poor? 3. Has your friend no longer foreseen? 4. Have they no longer been to school? 5. Have you [m. p.] not been invited any more? 6. Did they no longer write to your friend? 7. Were their exercises no longer corrected? 8. Has her brother no longer omitted? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Have your daughters no longer foreseen? 10. Would you no longer have avoided? 11. Did you not read this book again? 12. Did she no longer make the same mistakes? 13. Did you no longer hear that? 14. Were they no longer friends? 15. Has your sister no longer believed? 16. Has he no longer answered his letters? 17. Did they no longer oblige their customers? |
|--|--|

13. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 10.]

NOTE.—In Exercises 13, 14, 15, 16, insert the negatives *pas*, *point* [not, not any], or *rien* [nothing, not anything].

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. He has not any pens. | 12. They did not eat anything. |
| 2. We had not any time. | 13. They know nothing. |
| 3. She had not any acquaintances. | 14. They do not know that family. |
| 4. We should not have any money. | 15. He would not say anything. |
| 5. They were giving no rewards. | 16. They do not know that lesson. |
| 6. You would not go to Paris. | 17. She was doing nothing. |
| 7. You had nothing. | 18. We shall not go alone. |
| 8. We learnt nothing. | 19. I did not see anything. |
| 9. She ate nothing. | 20. They will not hear the music. |
| 10. They are not doing anything. | 21. You would drink nothing. |
| 11. You would not give anything. | 22. We wanted nothing. |

14. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. Has he no pens? | 12. Did they not eat anything? |
| 2. Had we not any time? | 13. Did they not know anything? |
| 3. Had she no acquaintances? | 14. Do they not know that family? |
| 4. Should we have no money? | 15. Would he not say anything? |
| 5. Were they giving no rewards? | 16. Don't they know that lesson? |
| 6. Would you not go to Paris? | 17. Was she doing nothing? |
| 7. Had you not anything? | 18. Shall we not go alone? |
| 8. Did he not learn anything? | 19. Did not I see anything? |
| 9. Did she not eat anything? | 20. Will they not hear the music? |
| 10. Are they doing nothing? | 21. Would you not drink anything? |
| 11. Would you not give anything? | 22. Did we not want anything? |

15. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. He has not had any [of] pens. | 12. They had not eaten anything. |
| 2. We have had no [of] time. | 13. They did not know anything. |
| 3. She had had no [of] acquaintances. | 14. They did not know that family. |
| 4. We should not have had any [of] money. | 15. He would have said nothing. |
| 5. They had been giving no rewards. | 16. They have not known that lesson. |
| 6. You would not have gone to Paris. | 17. She had been doing nothing. |
| 7. You have not had anything. | 18. We shall not have [be] gone alone. |
| 8. We have not learnt anything. | 19. I have seen nothing. |
| 9. She has eaten nothing. | 20. They will not have heard the music. |
| 10. They have done nothing. | 21. You would not have drunk anything. |
| 11. You would not have given anything. | 22. We have not wanted anything. |

16. [On Col. 2. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Has he not had any pens? | 12. Had they eaten nothing? |
| 2. Have we had no time? | 13. Have they known nothing? |
| 3. Has she not had any acquaintances? | 14. Have they not known that family? |
| 4. Should we not have had any money? | 15. Would he not have said anything? |
| 5. Have they not given any rewards? | 16. Have they not known that lesson? |
| 6. Would you not have gone to Paris? | 17. Had she not done anything? |
| 7. Have you not had anything? | 18. Shall we not have gone alone? |
| 8. Have we not learnt anything? | 19. Have I not seen anything? |
| 9. Has she not eaten anything? | 20. Will they not have heard the music? |
| 10. Have they done nothing? | 21. Would you not have drunk anything? |
| 11. Would you not have given anything? | 22. Have we not wanted anything? |

17. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 12.]

NOTE.—Insert the negatives *aucunement* [by no means, on no account], *guère* [but little, but few], *nullement* [by no means].

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. I do not by any means know these people. | 7. We were by no means told [instructed] of that affair. |
| 2. She learnt but little. | 8. I do not ask that by any means. |
| 3. We receive but few letters. | 9. She speaks but little French. |
| 4. I shall by no means allow. | 10. They would have but few holidays. |
| 5. You shall on no account write. | |
| 6. They do not want by any means. | |

[NOTE.—*Guère* [or *guères*, in poetry] meaning *but little*, is like all other negatives, used with *NE* before the verb; in the sense of *scarcely*, *but*, it is also followed by *que* in Col. 14.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 11. He reads scarcely anything but German poetry. | 13. They receive only bread and water twice a [per] day. |
| 12. Their master teaches scarcely anything but English. | 14. You scarcely do anything but talking [infin.]. |

18. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 14.]

NOTE.—Insert the negatives *aucun* [not any]; *nul* [not any]; *nulle part* [nowhere]; *personne* [no one, nobody]; *que* [only, but].

- | | |
|--|----------------------------------|
| 1. I do not admit any excuse. | 11. You would admit no beggars. |
| 2. We see no country. | 12. We knew nobody there. |
| 3. They go nowhere. | 13. We do not see anybody. |
| 4. You know nobody here. | 14. You would not omit anywhere. |
| 5. We had but £3 with [upon] us. | 15. I did not see anybody. |
| 6. They did not know anybody. | 16. Nobody would admit that. |
| 7. We did not go anywhere. | 17. We shall go to Eltham only. |
| 8. We should not admit anybody. | 18. We never see anybody. |
| 9. You had only a few friends. | 19. They never go anywhere. |
| 10. They went nowhere by themselves [alone.] | 20. We should not know anybody. |

19. [On Col. 1. 2. 8. 13. 14.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. I have not admitted any excuse. | 12. We knew nobody there. |
| 2. We have seen no country. | 13. We have not seen any one. |
| 3. They have not gone anywhere. | 14. You would have admitted nowhere. |
| 4. You have not known any one here. | 15. I had not seen anybody. |
| 5. We have spent but £30. | 16. We shall have gone to Dunkirk only. |
| 6. They have not known anybody. | 17. Nobody [not] would have admitted that. |
| 7. We have not gone anywhere. | 18. We have never seen anybody. |
| 8. We should not have admitted any one. | 19. They have never gone anywhere. |
| 9. You have had a few friends only. | 20. That work would not have been admitted anywhere. |
| 10. They had gone nowhere by themselves. | 21. We should not have known any one. |
| 11. You would have admitted no reasons. | |

20. [On Col. 1. 3. 8.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. They would write to me twice. | 12. We shall write to each other. |
| 2. You will send us those parcels. | 13. These boys [pupils] spoke Italian to each other. |
| 3. You spoke [in] French to me. | 14. Your boys [children] appear to me <i>to be</i> attentive. |
| 4. That appears very fair to us. | 15. Your boys [sons] obeyed us. |
| 5. His daughter obeys me in everything. | 16. Their boys and girls told me. |
| 6. Her son described it to you. | 17. We shall lend you this umbrella. |
| 7. I shall be writing to you. | 18. He would give us his address. |
| 8. Those [news] papers please me. | 19. We shall address these documents to each other. |
| 9. We shall write to each other. | 20. They would obey you. |
| 10. They asked [to] me <i>for</i> this book. | 21. She would ask [to] me... |
| 11. They used to send presents to each other. | |

21. [On Col. 3. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Would they write twice to me? | 13. Shall we write to one another? |
| 2. Will you send us those parcels? | 14. Are these boys talking Italian to each other? |
| 3. Did you speak [in] French to me? | 15. Do my boys appear to you <i>to be</i> indolent? |
| 4. Did that appear fair to you? | 16. Did your boys obey us? |
| 5. Does his daughter obey me? | 17. Did their boys and girls tell me? |
| 6. Did her son describe it to you? | 18. Shall we lend you this umbrella? |
| 7. Shall I write to you? | 19. Would he give us his address? |
| 8. Do those papers please you? | 20. Shall we address these documents to each other? |
| 9. Shall we write to each other? | 21. Would they obey you? |
| 10. Did you talk German to each other? | 22. Would she ask me...? |
| 11. Did they ask me <i>for</i> this book? | |
| 12. Did they send presents to each other? | |

22. [On Col. 1. 2. 3. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. They would never write to me. 2. You will no longer lend us your English history. 3. You did not speak French to me. 4. His proposal does not appear fair to us. 5. She scarcely [9] ever obeys me. 6. They never described to us [that] what they have seen. 7. I shall never again write to you. 8. His composition does not please me at all. 9. We shall no longer write anything to each other. 10. We ask nothing of [to] you. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. They never sent anything to each other. 12. We shall write to each other no more. 13. These boys never speak Italian to each other. 14. Your boys do not appear to me <i>to be</i> cheerful. 15. Her boys never obey us. 16. Those boys and girls told me nothing. 17. We shall never [10] lend you anything [10] again. 18. He would no longer give us his address. |
|--|---|

23. [On Col. 2. 3. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Would they not write to me any more? 2. Will you not send us those birds? 3. Did not his proposal seem fair to you? 4. Does not that child obey you? 5. Did they never describe to you that event? 6. Will you not write to me any more? 7. Does not his composition please you? 8. Do they no longer write to one another? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Did you not speak German to us? 10. Do you not ask me <i>for</i> anything? 11. Did they never send anything to each other? 12. Shall we not write to each other? 13. Did they never speak to each other? 14. Do boys never appear to you <i>to be</i> idle? 15. Do they no longer obey you? 16. Will you never lend us anything? 17. Would she not give you her address? 18. Do they owe you nothing? |
|---|---|

24. [On Col. 1. 2. 3. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. They have not written to me again. 2. You would not have sent those dogs to us. 3. They have not spoken to us. 4. Their request has not seemed unjust to us. 5. Their messenger has not obeyed us. 6. You have not written to me any more. 7. His exercises did not please me. 8. They have written to each other no more. 9. They have spoken to each other. 10. You have not asked me <i>for</i> anything. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. They have not sent anything to each other. 12. We have not written to each other. 13. They had never spoken to one another. 14. Your boys have never appeared greedy to me. 15. They have not obeyed you any longer. 16. They told me [that] what you think. 17. You have never lent us anything. 18. She would not have given you their address. 19. They no longer owe us anything. |
|--|---|

25. [On Col. 2. 3. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Has she not written to you? 2. Would you not have sent us your work? 3. Has not their application seemed well founded to you? 4. Have their messengers never obeyed you? 5. Did I never relate that event to you? 6. Would you not have written to us? 7. Did not her composition please you? 8. Did they no longer write to each other? 9. Did you never speak German to each other? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Have you not asked me <i>for</i> anything? 11. Have you not sent anything to each other? 12. Did they never write to each other? 13. Did you not speak to each other? 14. Did not your boys seem anxious [to you]? 15. Did she not obey you? 16. Did they never tell you that? 17. Would you never have lent us anything? 18. Would she not have given you her sanction? 19. Had they not owed you anything? 20. Will she not have asked you again? |
|--|---|

26. [On Col. 1. 4. 8.]

NOTE.—Many of the verbs in these exercises are used *reflexively* in French.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I see him every day. 2. He received me very well. 3. They regret her bitterly. 4. We spend them [m.]. 5. You were showing them. 6. They will recognize you at once. 7. I should send them <i>away</i>. 8. Their son-in-law has <i>got</i> them. 9. Were they glad? They were so. 10. She was studying it. 11. We shall stop there. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. She was struggling in vain. 13. The enemy would surrender. 14. Those girls enjoy themselves. 15. We suspected that. 16. The ladies were turning round. 17. Her pupils were complaining. 18. The boarders were washing themselves. 19. We made use of that expression. 20. They were better [<i>se porter</i>]. |
|---|--|

27. [On Col. 4. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you see him every day? 2. Did he receive you less well? 3. Do they regret her bitterly? 4. Are you spending them? 5. Did you shew them? 6. Will they recognize you at once? 7. Would you send them <i>away</i>? 8. Has their daughter <i>got</i> them? 9. Have we <i>got</i> it? 10. Were they not [it]? 11. Was she studying it? 12. Shall we stop there? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 13. Was she struggling in vain? 14. Would the enemy surrender? 15. Are those girls enjoying themselves? 16. Did you suspect that? 17. Did the ladies turn round? 18. Were her pupils complaining? 19. Were the boarders washing themselves? 20. Did we use that expression? 21. Do we behave well? 22. Were they better? |
|---|---|

28. [On Col. 1. 2. 4. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I never see him now. 2. He does not receive me badly. 3. They no longer regret her. 4. We do not spend them. 5. I shall not shew them any more. 6. They will not recognize you. 7. You would not send them away. 8. Their step-son has not <i>got</i> them. 9. We have not <i>got</i> it. 10. They are never so [it]. 11. She was studying it no more. 12. We shall not stop there again. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 13. She was not struggling in vain. 14. The enemy will never surrender. 15. Those girls no longer enjoy themselves. 16. We never suspected that. 17. Ladies never turn round. 18. Her pupils no longer complain. 19. The boarders are not washing themselves. 20. We did not use that word. 21. They scarcely ever behave well. 22. She is not better. |
|---|---|

29. [On Col. 2. 4. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you no longer see her? 2. Does he not receive you well? 3. Do they not regret them? 4. Are we not spending it? 5. Will you never shew them? 6. Would you not recognize her? 7. Why do you not send them away? 8. Has he not <i>got</i> them? 9. Have we not yet got it? 10. Would they not see us? 11. Where was she studying it? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Did she not struggle in vain? 13. Will not the enemy surrender? 14. Do not those girls enjoy themselves? 15. Did you not suspect that? 16. Did not the ladies turn round? 17. Do not pupils always complain? 18. Are not the boarders washing themselves? 19. Did you not make use of this idiom? 20. Is she not better now? |
|---|--|

ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

30. [On Col. 1. 4. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I have seen him <i>the day</i> before yesterday.
I have seen her yesterday.
I have seen them [m.] last night.
I have seen them [f.] at dusk. 2. He has received me [m.] most kindly [one cannot better].
He has received me [f.] coldly.
He has received us [m.] with [at] open arms.
He has received us [f.]. 3. They have regretted him <i>very</i> much [well].
They have regretted her incessantly. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> They have regretted them [m.] sincerely.
They have regretted them [f.] bitterly. 4. We have spent it [m.].
We have spent it [f.].
We have <i>spent</i> them [f.].
We have spent them [m.]. 5. You have shewn it [f.].
You have shewn it [m.].
You have shewn them [f.].
You have shewn them [m.]. 6. They will have recognized him.
They will have recognized her.
They have recognized them [m.].
They have recognized them [f.]. |
|--|---|

31. [On Col. 1. 4. 8. 13. *continued.*]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>7. I should have sent him away.
I should have sent her away.
I should have sent them [m.] away.
I should have sent them [f.] away.</p> <p>8. I have had it [f].
I have had it [m.].
I have had them [f.].
I have had them [m.].</p> <p>9. You have requested me [f.].
You have requested them [m.].
You have requested him.
You have requested her.</p> | <p>10. They have invited you, Miss.
They have invited me [m.].
They have invited us [f.].
They have invited them [m.].</p> <p>11. They would have eaten it [m.].
They would have eaten them [f.].
They would have eaten them [m.].
They would have eaten it [f.].</p> <p>12. She has been studying it [m.].
She has been studying them [m.].
She has been studying them [f.].
She has been studying it [f.].</p> |
|--|--|

32. [On Col. 1. 4. 8. 13. *continued.*]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>13. That young man stopped there.
That young lady stopped there.
Those old men stopped there.
Those old women stopped there.</p> <p>14. I have been struggling.
She has been struggling.
We have been struggling.
They have been struggling.</p> <p>15. The enemy [s.] would have surrendered.
The fleet would have surrendered.
The combatants would have surrendered.</p> | <p>The forces would have surrendered.</p> <p>16. My brother has enjoyed himself.
My sister has enjoyed herself.
Your brothers enjoyed themselves.
Your nieces enjoyed themselves.</p> <p>17. I have suspected that.
She has suspected that.
We have suspected that.
They [people] have suspected that.</p> <p>18. They would have turned round.
We should have turned round.
You would have turned round.
He would have turned round.</p> |
|--|---|

33. [On Col. 1. 4. 8. 13. *continued.*]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>19. Her butler has been complaining.
His aunt has been complaining.
Our friends have complained.
Their servants have complained.</p> <p>20. The boy has dressed himself.
That girl has dressed herself.
These children dressed themselves.
Your daughters dressed themselves.</p> <p>21. We have retired in time.
They [m.] have retired before us.
They [f.] have retired without him.
He has retired after them.</p> | <p>22. I have made use of this volume.
She has used that towel.
We have used these grammars.
They have made use of her slate.</p> <p>23. I behaved well towards him [18].
She behaved well towards them.
They behaved well towards us.
They behaved well towards her.</p> <p>24. He has been [<i>se porter</i>] very well.
She has been very well.
We have been very well.
They [f.] have been very well.</p> |
|---|---|

34. [On Col. 4. 8. (1.) 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Have you read them [m.]? 2. Has she eaten them [f.]? 3. Have we made haste? 4. Have you been well? 5. Have they accustomed themselves to it [6]? 6. Would you have met us? 7. Would that gentleman have invited us? 8. Has your sister learnt it [f.]? 9. Had they assisted us? 10. Have I warned you [f.]? 11. Have they [f.] said so [it]? 12. Have you asked for them [m.]? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 13. Have you lost them [m.]? 14. Has your father received it [f.]? 15. Would you have forgotten her? 16. Have their friends paid him? 17. Have they subscribed to that periodical? 18. Would you have laughed <i>at</i> [of] him? 19. Have you put yourself about? 20. Have you been making a mistake? 21. When will you have made up your mind? 22. Has she been bathing? |
|--|---|

35. [On Col. 1. 2. 4. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I have never read them [f.] 2. She has not eaten them [m.] 3. We have not made haste. 4. She has not been bathing. 5. You have never asked for them. 6. She has not made up her mind. 7. We have never said so [it]. 8. They have not applied themselves. 9. They have never warned us. 10. We have made a mistake. 11. They have no longer assisted us. 12. That lady has put herself about. 13. My sister has not learnt it [m.] | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 14. I [f.] have not made fun of him. 15. He would not have invited us. 16. We should not have met them. 17. Your sisters have never accustomed themselves to... 18. You [f.p.] had not dressed yourselves. 19. His friends have not paid them [f.] 20. We have not been well. 21. She has not forgotten us. 22. They have not lost her. |
|---|---|

36. [On Col. 2. 4. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Have you not read them [m.]? 2. Has she not eaten them [f.]? 3. Have you not made haste? 4. Has she not bathed? 5. Have they never asked for them? 6. Has she not made up her mind? 7. Have you never said so [it]? 8. Have you no longer applied yourselves? 9. Have they never warned her? 10. Have you made no mistake? 11. Have they never assisted her? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Have you put yourself about? 13. Has not your sister learnt it [f.]? 14. Has he not made fun of her? 15. Would he not have invited us? 16. Shall we not have met them? 17. Have not your sisters and brothers accustomed themselves? 18. Had you not dressed? 19. Has she not paid us? 20. Have you not been well? 21. Has she not omitted them [f.]? 22. Have they not lost them [f.]? |
|---|---|

37. [On Col. 1. 3. 4. 8.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I shall give them to you. 2. We wrote it to you. 3. He sent them to us. 4. She will ask [to] him [5] <i>for</i> it [f.]. 5. You did address them [m.] to us. 6. They will forgive him [5] them. 7. He was writing it to you. 8. She told us them [these stories]. 9. We related it [f.] to you. 10. You will open it [m.] to us. 11. I withdrew it <i>from</i> [to] you. 12. We appropriated them [m.] [to ourselves]. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 13. They told [it to (f.)] each other. 14. We gave them [m.] back to each other. 15. You granted them to each other. 16. We asked [it to (m.)] each other. 17. They told [them (f.) to] each other. 18. We divided them [m.] between us. 19. You returned it [f.] to each other. 20. We spoke it [f.] to each other. 21. They reserved them [m.] <i>for</i> [to] themselves. |
|--|--|

38. [On Col. 3. 4. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Shall I give them to you? 2. Did we write it to you? 3. Did he send them to us? 4. Will she ask him [5] <i>for</i> it [f.]? 5. Did you address them to us? 6. Will they forgive them to him [5]? 7. Did he write it to you? 8. Did she tell them to us? 9. Did we relate it to you! 10. Will you open it for us? 11. Did people bring them to you? 12. Do you withdraw it <i>from</i> me? 13. Did we appropriate them [m.] 14. Did they tell [it (f.) to] each other? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 15. Did we give them [m.] back to each other? 16. Did you grant them [f.] to each other? 17. Did we ask [it (m.) to] each other? 18. Did they tell [them (f.) to] each other? 19. Did you divide them [m.] between you? 20. Did you return it [f.] to each other? 21. Did you talk it [m.] to each other? 22. Did they reserve them [m.] for [to] themselves? |
|---|--|

39. [On Col. 1. 2. 3. 4. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I shall never give them to you. 2. We shall not write it to you. 3. He no longer sent them to us. 4. He will not ask [it to] him [5.] 5. You never addressed them to us. 6. They will forgive [them to] him [5] no more. 7. He did not write it to you. 8. She will not tell [it to] us. 9. We shall never relate it [f.] to you. 10. We will not open it for you [3]. 11. I did not withdraw it <i>from</i> [to] you. 12. We did not appropriate them. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 13. They did not tell [it (f.) to] each other. 14. We did not give them back to each other. 15. You did not grant them to each other. 16. We did not ask [it (m.) to] each other. 17. They did not tell each other. 18. We did not divide them between us. 19. We never returned them [f.] to each other. 20. We did not talk it to each other. 21. They do not reserve them for [to] themselves. |
|---|---|

40. [On Col. 2. 3. 4. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Will he not give them to you? | 11. Did we not appropriate them? |
| 2. Will not your brother write it to us? | 12. Did not these people tell each other? |
| 3. Do they no longer send them to you? | 13. Did we not give them to each other? |
| 4. Will he not ask [it to] him [5]? | 14. Did you not grant them to each other? |
| 5. Do you never address them to us? | 15. Shall we not ask each other? |
| 6. Will your parents no longer forgive [them to] him [5]? | 16. Did not the boys tell each other? |
| 7. Did not their tutor write it to you? | 17. Did we not divide them between us? |
| 8. Will she not tell [it to] you? | 18. Did you not return it? |
| 9. Will you not open it <i>for</i> us [3]? | 19. Did they not talk it [f.] to each other? |
| 10. Will you not withdraw it from me? | |

41. [On Col. 1. 3. 4. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. I should have given them [f.] to you. | 10. People have brought them [f.] to you. |
| 2. We have written it [f.] to you. | 11. I have withdrawn it [f.] <i>from</i> you. |
| 3. He has sent them [m.] to us. | 12. We have appropriated them [m.] |
| 4. You addressed them [m.] <i>to</i> us. | 13. We have given them [f.] back to each other. |
| 5. They would have forgiven them [f.] to us. | 14. You did not grant them [m.] to each other. |
| 6. If he had written it [f.] to you. | 15. We have asked [it (m.)] each other. |
| 7. She has told us them [f.]. | 16. They told [them (f.) to] each other. |
| 8. We have related it [f.] to you. | 17. We divided them [m.] between us. |
| 9. You will have opened it [m.] <i>for</i> us [3]. | 18. You returned them to each other. |

42. [On Col. 3. 4. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Would he have given them [m.] to you? | 12. Have you withdrawn them [m.] from us? |
| 2. Did you write it [m.] to us? | 13. Have we appropriated them [f.]? |
| 3. Has he sent them [f.] to you? | 14. Have they told [it (f.)] each other? |
| 4. Would she have asked him [5] <i>for</i> them [m.]? | 15. Have you given them back to each other? |
| 5. Have you addressed them [m.] <i>to</i> us? | 16. Have they granted them to each other? |
| 6. Have your sisters forgiven them [f.] to him [5]? | 17. Have we asked it [f.] of [to] each other? |
| 7. Had their brother written it [m.] to you? | 18. Have they told them [f.] to each other? |
| 8. Did she tell us [them (m.)]? | 19. Did you divide them [f.] among yourselves [3]? |
| 9. Have the children related it [m.] to you? | 20. Have they returned them [m.] to each other? |
| 10. Would you have opened it [f.] <i>for</i> her [3]? | |
| 11. Has he brought them [m.] to you? | |

43. [On Col. 1. 2. 3. 4. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We have not given them [f.] to you. 2. You have not written it [f.] to us. 3. We have not been sending them [f.] to you. 4. You have not addressed them [f.] to us. 5. He would not have written it [m.] to you. 6. She has not told them [f.] to us. 7. She did not relate them [m.] to us. 8. You would not have opened them [f.] <i>for</i> us [3]. 9. People no longer brought it to us. 10. I have never withdrawn it <i>from</i> you [3]. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. We have not appropriated them [f.]. 12. They [m.] never told [them (f.) to] each other. 13. We have not given them [m.] back to each other. 14. You did not grant them [f.] to each other. 15. We did not ask them [f.] of each other. 16. They have never told [4] each other [3]. 17. You have not returned them [f.] to each other. 18. We have not spoken it [f.] to each other for a long time. |
|---|---|

44. [On Col. 2. 3. 4. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did not Henry give them [f.] to you? 2. Did we not write it [m.] to you? 3. Has not Edgar sent them [f.] to me? 4. Have they not addressed them to me? 5. Would not Maggie have written so to us? 6. Have they not told me so [it (m.)]? 7. Has not Edith related them [f.] to us? 8. Would you not have opened it [f.] <i>for</i> [to] me? 9. Did not Constance bring them [m.] to me? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Have I not withdrawn them <i>from</i> you? 11. Would not Robert have appropriated them [m.] to himself? 12. Did they [m.] never relate them [f.] to each other? 13. Have we not given them [m.] back to each other? 14. Had we not asked each other for them [f.]? 15. Have they [f.] no longer asked each other for them [m.]? 16. Would not Norman have applied them [m.] to himself? 17. Did you not return them [m.] to each other? 18. Did we not speak it [f.] to each other? |
|--|---|

45. [On Col. 1. 5. 8.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We shall teach him to ride. 2. This message will surely reach him. 3. She offered them her services. 4. We shall tell him the truth. 5. You displeased her <i>very</i> much. 6. We spoke to them <i>the day</i> before yesterday. 7. This town belonged to them. 8. Your pupils spoke French to her. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Excursions will please them. 10. We shall obey them at all times. 11. They forgave them their failings. 12. She will send him her portrait. 13. We gave him all our apples. 14. You paid [made] her a visit. 15. He taught her that waltz. 16. They used to be very dear to him. 17. Your praise [pl.] pleases them. 18. This hat belongs to him. |
|--|---|

46. [On Col. 5. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Will you teach him to swim? | 11. Did they forgive them [ind.] their ignorance? |
| 2. When will this message reach him? | 12. Will he send her his likeness? |
| 3. Would he send these rings back to her? | 13. Will you deliver this parcel to him? |
| 4. Did she offer them her services? | 14. Did you give them all their pens back? |
| 5. Will you tell him the truth? | 15. Did you pay them frequent visits? |
| 6. Did you displease her <i>very</i> much? | 16. Is he teaching her that polka? |
| 7. Did she speak to them last night? | 17. Does our decision please him? |
| 8. Do these towns belong to them? | 18. Does this bonnet belong to her? |
| 9. Did you write to him yesterday? | 19. Do you tell her what you think? |
| 10. Will their excursions please them? | |

47. [On Col. 1. 2. 5. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. They do not teach them to draw. | 12. They will never forgive them their cowardice. |
| 2. Our message will never reach him. | 13. She will not send them her portrait any more. |
| 3. He would not send anything back to her. | 14. We shall not deliver this parcel to him to-night. |
| 4. She will not offer them her services. | 15. We never give them oranges <i>at</i> night [the evening]. |
| 5. We shall not tell him a falsehood. | 16. You do not pay them too many visits. |
| 6. You will never displease her. | 17. Her praise does not please him. |
| 7. We did not speak to them <i>on</i> that day. | 18. This walking-stick was not his. |
| 8. Strasburg no longer belongs to them. | 19. We shall never tell her what you say. |
| 9. We did not write that to him. | |
| 10. That journey would not please her. | |
| 11. We never disobey them. | |

48. [On Col. 2. 5. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Do you not give them dictation? | 9. Would not your presents please her? |
| 2. Will these stamps never reach him? | 10. Are you no longer disobeying them? |
| 3. Will you not tell her that I am ill? | 11. Will you never forgive them their neglect? |
| 4. Does not your work displease them? | 12. Would you not deliver this to him <i>on</i> Tuesday? |
| 5. Did you not speak to them <i>on</i> Monday? | 13. Do you never give them any jam? |
| 6. Does Strasburg no longer belong to them? | 14. Will he not teach her drawing? |
| 7. Does not the servant tell him to come? | 15. Does not my writing please them? |
| 8. Did you never write them in French? | 16. Does not this sunshade belong to her? |
| | 17. Do you never tell them what I say? |

49. [On Col. 1. 5. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We taught him to ride. 2. This message will have reached him. 3. He would have sent those pens back to her. 4. She has offered them her services. 5. We shall have told him the truth. 6. You very much displeased her. 7. We spoke to them <i>on</i> Wednesday last. 8. Your pupils spoke to her <i>on</i> Thursday. 9. If we had written to him <i>on</i> Friday. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. These projects pleased her. 11. We at all times obeyed them. 12. They [indef.] forgave them their failings. 13. She will have sent him her portrait. 14. They will have delivered this parcel to him. 15. We gave her all our apples. 16. You paid him very few visits. 17. He has been teaching her to drive. 18. Her memory was very dear to him. 19. Your praise pleased them. 20. We have sent her this bill. |
|--|---|

50. [On Col. 5. 8. (1.) 13.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Have you taught them drilling? 2. Will this message have reached him? 3. Would he have sent her rings back [to her]? 4. Has she offered them her apartments? 5. Would you have told him a falsehood? 6. Did this statement displease her? 7. Have you spoken to him? 8. Did that business belong to them? 9. Will your pupils have spoken to him? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Did you write to her last week? 11. Have your brothers succeeded him? 12. Did they forgive them their ignorance? 13. Will he have sent his likeness to her? 14. Did you deliver this parcel to him? 15. Did you give them all those grapes? 16. Have you paid her frequent visits? 17. Did he write twice to her? 18. Have you succeeded them? 19. Did your verses please him? 20. Did they tell them what they think? |
|--|--|

51. [On Col. 1. 2. 5. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We have not taught her to skate. 2. He never would have succeeded him. 3. She did not offer them her support. 4. You did not displease him. 5. We have not told him a falsehood. 6. They did not speak to her last Saturday. 7. That has never belonged to him. 8. Your books have never reached them. 9. If we had not written to them. 10. These strawberries would not have pleased them. 11. She has not always obeyed them. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. They would never have forgiven them. 13. She will not have given them her consent. 14. They will not have delivered that nosegay to him. 15. We had not given her all our gooseberries. 16. You have not paid him <i>for</i> those coins. 17. He has not taught her to row [16]. 18. Her brother did not succeed them. 19. Your remarks did not please him. 20. We did not send her those frames. 21. They did not tell them what I think. |
|---|---|

52. [On Col. 2. 5. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Has she not shewn them the way? | 9. Would she not have given him her portrait? |
| 2. Have not your sisters told them what I think? | 10. Would you no longer have forgiven him? |
| 3. Did we not send her those frames? | 11. Had she never obeyed him? |
| 4. Did not your remarks please them? | 12. Did you no longer write to them? |
| 5. Has not your brother succeeded him? | 13. Was this lexicon no longer of any use to them? |
| 6. Would you not have paid him so much? | 14. Did you not talk French to her? |
| 7. Did not his views appear clear to her? | 15. Has she never told him <i>of</i> that? |
| 8. Will they [ind.] not have delivered this telegram to them? | 16. Did not your brother displease her? |
| | 17. Has she not offered them more? |
| | 18. Would you not have returned their money [to them]? |

53. [On Col. 1. 4. 5. 8.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. We asked him [<i>for</i> it (m.)] yesterday. | 10. He was telling it [f. (them)] <i>on</i> that night. |
| 2. He shewed it [f.] them last month. | 11. He forwarded it [m.] to her <i>the day</i> before yesterday. |
| 3. They wrote [it (m.)] to her a week ago. | 12. I handed them to him at supper. |
| 4. We shall send them to him next week. | 13. He secured them <i>for</i> him [5] each time. |
| 5. I should read it [f.] to him, if I were [of] you. | 14. I shall conceal them from him. |
| 6. He was throwing it [m.] <i>over</i> to her. | 15. You hid them from them [5]. |
| 7. She used to sing them to him every day. | 16. We shall address it [f.] to her. |
| 8. They [ind.] brought them to her every morning. | 17. They took them <i>away</i> from him. |
| 9. You left them with her [5] the other day. | 18. We shall restore it [m.] to her. |
| | 19. He dedicated them to him [20] and to her [20]. |
| | 20. They took them from her [5]. |

54. [On Col. 4. 5. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Will he shew them to him next month? | 10. Will you send them to him [20] or to them [20]? |
| 2. Did you write it [m.] to them last week? | 11. How many times will you pass them to him? |
| 3. Will they [ind.] send it [m.] to him <i>the day</i> after to-morrow? | 12. Will your boys secure them for him [5]? |
| 4. Why was he reading it [m.] to her? | 13. Do they destine them to her? |
| 5. When will you throw it [f.] <i>over</i> to them? | 14. Why do you always take them <i>away</i> from her? |
| 6. How often would you sing it [f.] to her? | 15. Was she hiding them from [to] him? |
| 7. Did your father bring them for [to] him? | 16. When will you restore them to her? |
| 8. Will he let him <i>keep</i> them? | 17. Do you take it [m.] from him [5]? |
| 9. Did you refuse [them to] him? | 18. Does he give it [m.] back to her [20] or to them [20]? |

55. [On Col. 1. 2. 4. 5. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We shall not write it [m.] to her. 2. You would not send them to him. 3. We did not read it <i>over</i> [f.] to her. 4. I was not throwing it [f.] <i>over</i> to him. 5. I never sang them to her. 6. They will not bring them to him any more. 7. We shall not let him <i>keep</i> them. 8. I shall never again refuse [it (f.) to] them. 9. He would no longer relate it [m.] to him. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. We did not tell them the other day. 11. She no longer secured them for him [5]. 12. He does not intend them for her [5]. 13. She never conceals it [m.] from them [5]. 14. We no longer address them to him. 15. They will never take them <i>away</i> from her. 16. We shall not give it back to them. 17. I shall not dedicate it [f.] to them. 18. They did not take them from him. |
|---|--|

56. [On Col. 2. 4. 5. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Will not Laura shew them to him? 2. Did not your sister write it [m.] to her? 3. Would you not send it to him [20] and to me [20]? 4. Were we not reading them to him? 5. Will you never sing them to them? 6. Was not Blanche throwing it [f.] <i>over</i> to him? 7. Will they not bring them to him any more? 8. Would you let him <i>keep</i> them no longer? 9. Will you not refuse [it] them? 10. Would not they relate it [m.] to him? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Will not their brother forward it [f.] to them? 12. Do you never send it [f.] back to him? 13. Would not Gertrude hand it [f.] <i>over</i> to them? 14. Would she not conceal it [m.] from him? 15. Are you not hiding it [f.] from them? 16. Are you not addressing it [m.] to her [20] and to him [20]? 17. Did they not take them <i>away</i> from her? 18. Would he not inscribe it [f.] to her? |
|---|---|

57. [On Col. 1. 4. 5. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We have asked him <i>for</i> them [f.]. 2. He has always [11] shewn it [f.] to her. 3. They have written so [it (m.)] to him. 4. If we had sent them [f.] to her. 5. I should have read them [m.] <i>over</i> to her. 6. He has been throwing them [f.] to him. 7. She has sung them [f.] to her. 8. They have brought them [m.] to him. 9. When you have let him <i>keep</i> them [f.] 10. She would have refused them [m.] to her. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. He has been saying them [f.] to him. 12. We have forwarded it [f.] to them. 13. I have handed them [f.] to him. 14. We always destined her for him. 15. I should have concealed it [f.] from him. 16. You have been hiding it from them. 17. We shall have addressed it [f.] to him. 18. They [f.] have taken them [m.] <i>away</i> from her. 19. We have restored it [f.] to her [20] and to them [m. (20)]. 20. I have dedicated them [f.] to him. |
|--|---|

58. [On Col. 4. 5. 8. (1.) 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Did we ask him <i>for</i> them [m.]? | 10. Would you have refused it [f.] to them [m.]? |
| 2. Did he always [11] show them [f.] to him? | 11. Has she been reciting them [m.] to her? |
| 3. Have they written so to him? | 12. Did you forward them [f.] to him? |
| 4. Have you sent them [m.] to her? | 13. Have you handed them to her? |
| 5. Would you have read them [f.] <i>over</i> to her? | 14. Had you intended it [m.] for her? |
| 6. Has he thrown them [m.] <i>over</i> to her? | 15. Would you have concealed it [m.] from her? |
| 7. Have you [f.] recommended it [m.] to him? | 16. Have you hidden it from them? |
| 8. Will they have brought them [m.] to them [f.]? | 17. Will they [f.] have addressed it to him? |
| 9. Have you let them <i>keep</i> it [f.]? | 18. Have they [ind.] taken it [f.] away from him? |

59. [On Col. 1. 2. 4. 5. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. I have never shewn it to them [m.] | 11. I have never forwarded it [m.] to him. |
| 2. They did not write them to her. | 12. She has not handed it [f.] to him. |
| 3. If we had never sent it to them [f.] | 13. He will no longer have secured them [f.] for him. |
| 4. We should not have read it <i>over</i> to her. | 14. I have not concealed it <i>from</i> him [3]. |
| 5. He has not thrown them <i>over</i> to him. | 15. You have not been hiding them [m.] <i>from</i> her [3]. |
| 6. She never sung them [f.] to her. | 16. We should not have addressed them [m.] to him. |
| 7. We have no longer recommended them [f.] to him. | 17. She had not taken them [f.] <i>away</i> from him. |
| 8. Because you [f.] have not let him <i>keep</i> it [m.] | 18. We have not given it [m.] him back. |
| 9. She would no longer have refused it [m.] to him. | |
| 10. You have not repeated them [m.] to her. | |

60. [On Col. 2. 4. 5. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Did you never introduce her to him? | 11. Will not they have conceded them [m.] to her? |
| 2. Did they not offer them [f.] to him any longer? | 12. Did you [f.] never confer it [m.] upon him [3]? |
| 3. Has she not paid it [m.] to her? | 13. Will you not have taken it [m.] from her [3]? |
| 4. Did you not teach him them [m.]? | 14. Did I not spell them [m.] to her? |
| 5. Had you not brought it to her? | 15. Did they not say them [f.] to him? |
| 6. Would not you have bought it [f.] of him [3]? | 16. Has he not opened them [f.] <i>for</i> him? |
| 7. Has not his brother taken them [m.] to him? | 17. Did you not snatch them [m.] <i>away</i> from her? |
| 8. Have you not brought them to her? | 18. Did they [m.] never play it [f.] to them? |
| 9. Have they [ind.] not awarded them [m.] to her? | 19. Would not your son have preserved them [f.] for him? |
| 10. Would they not have sworn it [f.] to him? | |

61. [On Col. 1. 6. 8.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We see a-great-deal of good in him. 2. We were thinking of him. 3. They always enjoy themselves there. 4. She is working at it day and night. 5. We added them to it. 6. We were thinking of her [20] and [m.] not of him [20]. 7. She will give all her care [p.] to it. 8. Because she was [8] sentenced [to it.] 13 9. Your friends are there already [11]. 10. As for your reasons, I yield to them. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. We shall enclose them [to it]. 12. She would consider it [6]. 13. Are you going there? Yes, I [6] am. 14. We get-accustomed to them. 15. He will add them to it. 16. I shall answer them [6] hereafter. 17. We shall make a-great-deal of profit by it. 18. They trust him more and more. 19. She and her sister often [11] gathered flowers in it. 20. I saw her there this morning. 21. Ah! I shall ever think of them. |
|---|---|

62. [On Col. 6. 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you see much good in her? 2. Were you thinking of her? 3. Do they still enjoy themselves there? 4. Are they working at it now? 5. Will you add them to it? 6. Are they addicted to it? 7. Would you think of them [20] or of me [20]? 8. Does he devote all his attention to it? 9. Why was she sentenced [to it]? 10. Were your friends already there? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Why do you not yield to them? 12. Will you enclose them [in it]? 13. Would your mother consider it? 14. Are you going there? Yes; are you 15. Are they getting accustomed to it 16. Will she add them to it? 17. Would you answer them? 18. Are you making much [profit] by it? 19. Do you trust him now? 20. Were they [f.] gathering roses there? 21. Will you ever think of them? |
|--|--|

63. [On Col. 1. 2. 6. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We never saw much good in him. 2. She was not thinking of him any more. 3. They never enjoy themselves there. 4. She does not work at it any longer. 5. We shall not add them to it. 6. She does not give herself up to it. 7. We never thought of him [20], but of her [20]. 8. He is not giving all his care to it. 9. She was not sentenced [to it]. 10. Your books are not there yet [11]. 11. We shall never yield to them. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. I should not enclose them [in it] this time. 13. They would never consider it. 14. Are you not going there? No, I am not. 15. We shall not get-accustomed to it. 16. He would not add them to it. 17. I shall not answer them yet [11]. 18. We are making no profit by it. 19. They don't trust him any more. 20. Bees do not gather much honey in it. 21. I shall not see them there <i>again</i>. 22. You will think no more of it. |
|---|---|

64. [On Col. 2. 6. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Will they not see much good in her [6]? | 12. Would you never consider it? |
| 2. Was she thinking no more of him? | 13. We are going there. Are you not? |
| 3. Does she no longer work at it? | 14. Do you not get-accustomed to it? |
| 4. Will you not add them to it? | 15. Would you not add them to it? |
| 5. Does she not give herself up to it? | 16. Will she not answer it by-and-by? |
| 6. Do you never think of them? | 17. Do you make no profit by it? |
| 7. Do they not give all their care [p.] to it? | 18. Do your brothers trust him no longer? |
| 8. Was she not sentenced [to it]? | 19. Did not bees gather much honey in it? |
| 9. Are your books no longer there? | 20. Do you no longer meet him there? |
| 10. Will she never yield to them? | 21. Will you think of them no more? |
| 11. Will you not enclose them [in it]? | |

65. [On Col. 1. 6. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. She [18] and they [18] have entered <i>it</i> [there.] | 12. They [f.] would have gone there. |
| 2. I have lost-my-way in it. | 13. We have shut ourselves <i>up</i> in it. |
| 3. We have-been attached to it. | 14. He remained a-long-time there. |
| 4. They have touched it. | 15. She resigned herself to it. |
| 5. We had aimed at it. | 16. He took-an-interest in it. |
| 6. He has looked into it. | 17. They have improved in it. |
| 7. We have done much [15] to it. | 18. We have given ourselves <i>up</i> to it. |
| 8. They have gained by it. | 19. He would have exhorted her to <i>do</i> it. |
| 9. You have applied yourself to it. | 20. She will have stooped to <i>do</i> it. |
| 10. She will have aspired to it. | 21. We have put-faith in it. |
| 11. I [f.] have reckoned upon it. | 22. They would have contributed to it. |

66. [On Col. 6. 8. (1.) 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Did they live long in it? | 14. Has she remained there <i>for a long-time</i> ? |
| 2. Did you lose-your-way in it? | 15. Have you resigned yourselves to it? |
| 3. Would you have-been-attached to it? | 16. Did he take-an-interest in it? |
| 4. Have they touched it? | 17. Have we [m. and f.] improved in it? |
| 5. Will you have aimed at it? | 18. Has she given herself <i>up</i> to it? |
| 6. Did you look into it? | 19. Would they [m.] have encouraged her in it? |
| 7. Did they do much to it? | 20. Would she have stooped to it? |
| 8. What have you gained by it? | 21. Would you have put-faith in it? |
| 9. Did they apply themselves to it? | 22. Why has your teacher contributed to it? |
| 10. Has she aspired to it? | |
| 11. Have you relied upon it? | |
| 12. Would they have gone there? | |
| 13. Have you [f.] shut yourself <i>up</i> in it? | |

67. [On Col. 1. 2. 6. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. He [18] and they [18 (f.)] never lived in it. 2. They did not lose-their-way in it. 3. We [m.] have not been-attached to it. 4. We [f.] have no longer touched it. 5. If we had not aimed at it any longer. 6. He has never looked closely into it. 7. Because we had not done a-great-deal to it. 8. They have made nothing by it. 9. You did not sufficiently [11] apply yourselves to it. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Considering that they did not go there. 11. They have not shut themselves up in it. 12. She would not have remained long there. 13. You have not made-up-your-mind for it. 14. He has never-taken-any-interest in it. 15. We have not improved in it. 16. She has not given herself <i>up</i> to it. 17. He would never have encouraged her in it. 18. She will never have stooped to it. |
|---|---|

68. [On Col. 2. 6. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did no colonists ever live in it? 2. Have not the children lost-their-way in it? 3. Would you not have been-attached to it? 4. Have you [f.] never touched it? 5. Why have you no longer aimed at it? 6. Have not the Standing Committee looked into it? 7. Have you not been making much progress with it? 8. Would you not have applied yourself to it? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Had she not aspired to it? 10. Did they never reckon upon it? 11. Would you have gone there no longer? 12. Did not the inhabitants shut themselves <i>up</i> in it? 13. Has she not remained there? 14. Had she resigned herself to it? 15. Has she not improved in it? 16. Have you not given yourself <i>up</i> to it? 17. Would he not have encouraged them in it? 18. Has she never consented to it? |
|---|--|

69. [On Col. 1. 7. 8.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We admire its beauties. 2. He always mentions it [7] to me. 3. She incessantly talks of him. 4. The grief [which] I experience at it. 5. I was-satisfied with it. 6. We know <i>some</i> of them. 7. They will make-an-apology for it. 8. We should-be-astonished at it. 9. Its streets are very wide. 10. We shall buy a <i>good</i> many of them. 11. It agrees with him. [He finds himself well with it.] | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. He will easily get-over it. 13. They went-away on the morrow. 14. We were <i>very</i> much struck with it. 15. Your sister will want them. 16. They will be all [d'autant] <i>the</i> richer for it. 17. We shall always profit by it. 18. I shall take some <i>from</i> him [5]. 19. She would be <i>very</i> much pleased with it. 20. Do not mention them, I pray you [for it]. 21. We should derive much advantage [p.] from it. |
|---|---|

70. [On Col. 7 8. (1.)]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you admire its fertility? 2. Does he always mention it [7] to you? 3. Does she talk of him incessantly? 4. Do you experience any disappointment at it? 5. Were you satisfied with him? 6. Do you know any of them? 7. Will they make-an-apology for it? 8. Would you be astonished at it? 9. Are its streets very spacious? 10. Will she buy some-of-them? 11. Does he repent it now? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Does it agree with you? [Do you find yourself well with it?] 13. Will they get over it? 14. Did they go-away <i>the day</i> before yesterday? 15. Was his daughter struck with it? 16. Will you require them? 17. Are they <i>the</i> richer for it? 18. Will you profit by it? 19. Will you take any from them [5]? 20. Would she be pleased with them? 21. Did you mention it [7]? 22. Should I derive much pleasure from it? |
|---|---|

71. [On Col. 1. 2. 7. 8. 10.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We do not admire its situation. 2. He will never mention it to him. 3. She never talks of him to me. 4. They do not feel grieved at it. 5. I shall not be satisfied with it. 6. We do not know any. 7. They will not make-an-apology for it. 8. He was not astonished at it. 9. Its flower-beds were not filled with it. 10. I shall not buy any of it. 11. He repents it no longer. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. It will never agree with her. 13. Neither he nor she will get over it. 14. They will not be going away ¹⁸ <i>the day</i> after to-morrow. 15. I was not struck with it. 16. She will no longer want them. 17. They are not <i>any the</i> poorer for it. 18. We shall not profit by it. 19. I shall not take any <i>from</i> her [5]. 20. You would not be sorry for it [7]. 21. We know nothing about it [7]. 22. They do not derive anything from it. |
|---|--|

72. [On Col. 2. 7. 8. (1.) 10.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you not approve of its style? 2. Do they never mention them to him? 3. Does she not always talk of them? 4. Do they no longer experience grief at it? 5. Would you not be satisfied with them? 6. Do you not know any of them? 7. Will they never make-any-apology for it? 8. Would you not be astonished at it? 9. Are not its landscapes delightful? 10. Will you not buy any-of-them? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Do they not yet repent of it? 12. Does it not agree with you? 13. Will you never get over it? 14. Will they not be going away this day fortnight? 15. Was not his son struck with it? 16. Would not they blush at it? 17. Are they <i>any the</i> poorer for it? 18. Will you not profit by them? 19. Do you never take any <i>from</i> them? 20. Was she not pleased with it? 21. Do they no longer mention her to you? 22. Would she not feel much pleasure at it [7]? |
|---|---|

73. [On Col. 1. 7. 8. 13.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p>1. They [ind.] have assured her of it.</p> <p>2. We have made two of them.</p> <p>3. I have wished <i>for some</i> of them.</p> <p>4. They would have lost more of it.</p> <p>5. He will have received <i>some</i> of them.</p> <p>6. She has attended to it.</p> <p>7. We have been-delighted with it.</p> <p>8. She has died from it.</p> <p>9. You always have complained of them.</p> <p>10. They had come <i>away</i> from it.</p> <p>11. Have you had any? I have [had <i>some</i>].</p> | <p>12. We have obtained six of them.</p> <p>13. We have returned from it.</p> <p>14. They will be punished for it.</p> <p>15. I have-been-astonished at it.</p> <p>16. You have been drinking some.</p> <p>17. They have-made-use of it.</p> <p>18. We shall soon have convinced them of it.</p> <p>19. She has been making fun of them.</p> <p>20. They have always procured them from abroad.</p> <p>21. We shall have resigned it.</p> <p>22. He has indulged-himself-to-his-heart's-content.</p> |
|---|--|

74. [On Col. 7. 8. (1.) 13.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>1. Have they assured him of it?</p> <p>2. What have you done with them?</p> <p>3. Have you wished for any?</p> <p>4. Would they have lost any of them?</p> <p>5. Have you received any?</p> <p>6. Will she have attended to it?</p> <p>7. Have you been delighted with it?</p> <p>8. Would she have died from it?</p> <p>9. Have you been complaining of them?</p> <p>10. Have they come <i>away</i> from it?</p> <p>11. I have had some. Have you [had any]?</p> | <p>12. Have you obtained any of them?</p> <p>13. Had we returned from it?</p> <p>14. Will they be punished for it?</p> <p>15. Have you been astonished at it?</p> <p>16. Has she drunk any?</p> <p>17. Had they made-use of it?</p> <p>18. Did you convince them of it?</p> <p>19. Have they been making fun of it?</p> <p>20. Did you always thank him for it?</p> <p>21. Would you have resigned it?</p> <p>22. Has he indulged-himself-to-his-heart's content?</p> |
|--|---|

75. [On Col. 1. 2. 7. 8. 10. 13.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>1. We have not assured them of it.</p> <p>2. She has done nothing with them.</p> <p>3. I never wished for any.</p> <p>4. We lost none [of them].</p> <p>5. They no longer received any.</p> <p>6. We have not attended to it.</p> <p>7. I have not been-angry at it.</p> <p>8. She would never have died of it.</p> <p>9. You did not complain of it.</p> <p>10. They have not come <i>away</i> from it.</p> <p>11. We have not had any. We have [had some].</p> <p>12. He has not obtained any.</p> | <p>13. If we had not been punished for it.</p> <p>14. They have not returned from it.</p> <p>15. She has not been-astonished at it.</p> <p>16. You did not drink <i>any</i> of it.</p> <p>17. You had not-made-use of it.</p> <p>18. We have not yet convinced them of it.</p> <p>19. I did not make fun of her.</p> <p>20. They have not procured any from abroad.</p> <p>21. He would not have resigned it.</p> <p>22. He did not indulge himself-to-his-heart's-content.</p> |
|---|---|

76. [On Col. 2. 7. 8. (1.) 10. 13.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did you not assure him of it? 2. Why did you never make any? 3. Have you not been longing for it? 4. Will they not have lost many of them?
Has she received none [of them]?
Have you not attended to it? 7. Have they not been pleased with it? 8. Did they not die from it? 9. Hast thou [f.] not complained of them? 10. Have we not come-back from it? 11. Did you not have any-of-them? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Did they not obtain <i>some</i> of it? 13. Have you not come from it? 14. Shall we not be punished for it? 15. Were you not astonished at it? 16. Has he not drunk any? 17. Had she not made-use of it? 18. Have you never convinced him of it? 19. Did I not make fun of her? 20. Has she not thanked you for it? 21. Would you not have resigned it? 22. Did they not indulge-themselves-to-their-heart's-content? |
|--|--|

ON THE IMPERATIVE MOOD.

77. [On Col. 3. or 5. Pronouns in the Dative Case.]

- | A. [affirmative]. | N. [negative]. |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Write to me as soon as you can [will be able]. 2. Introduce your friends to me. 3. Let us pay him what he asks. 4. Give [make] them my compliments. 5. Tell her that I am angry with her. 6. Send us <i>a</i> few melons <i>out</i> of your hot-house. 7. Let us write to each other twice a month. 8. Give him a ticket for the concert. 9. Always offer her your [the] right arm. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Do not write to me too soon. 11. Don't introduce your friends to me. 12. Do not let us pay him what he asks. 13. Do not give them my compliments. 14. Don't tell her all that. 15. Do not send us any melons, pray. 16. Let us write to each other only once a fortnight. 17. Do not give him any more tickets. 18. Never offer her your left arm. 19. Do not allow him to sit down. |

78. [On Col. 4. Pronouns in the Accusative Case.]

- | A. | N. |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Interrupt me as much as you like [will]. 2. Put them in your carpet-bag. 3. Let us beat him with this whip. 4. Offer it [f.] to your neighbour. 5. Shew yourselves <i>to be</i> more prudent. 6. Look <i>at</i> us and say what you think of it. 7. Let us add them to your presents. 8. Pray, send us to [in] town. 9. Pity us in our misfortunes. 10. Enjoy yourselves while you are young. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Do not interrupt me again. 12. Do not put them on that shelf. 13. Do not let us beat him with a stick. 14. Do not offer it [f.] to your companions. 15. Do not shew yourselves <i>to be</i> so greedy. 16. Don't look <i>at</i> us again in the street. 17. Let us not add them to their parcels. 18. Pray, do not send us again to London. 19. Do not pity us any longer. 20. Do not dress before dinner. |

79. [On Col. 3. or 5. Dative, and on Col. 4. Accusative.]

A.

1. Write it to him, for time is pressing.
2. Let us tell [it] her.
3. As for your experiments, explain them [to them].
4. Give it [f.] to us when you have read it.
5. Relate it [f.] to her; she has never heard it.
6. Pay it to us; we have a right to it.
7. Offer it [f.] to them; they deserve a reward.
8. Introduce them to us; we do not know them.
9. Leave them *with* [to] us a little longer.

N.

10. Do not write it to him yet; he is in no hurry.
11. Let us not tell it to her.
12. Do not again explain them to them.
13. Do not give it [f.] to us; we have read it.
14. Do not relate it to her; she knows it.
15. Do not pay it [m.] to us; it is not ours.
16. Do not offer it to them; they have not deserved it [f.].
17. Do not introduce them to us; we know them.
18. Leave them no longer with us.

80. [On Col. 7. Pronouns in the Genitive or Ablative Case.]

A.

1. Deduct from it what he owes you.
2. Gather the best of them.
3. Let us inform his friends of it.
4. Learn a few lines of it.
5. Laugh at it as much as you like.
6. Let us always remember it.
7. Help this young-lady *to* some.
8. Also give some-of-them to the gentleman.
9. Let us complain of it.

N.

10. Do not deduct any-from-it.
11. Do not gather the best of them.
12. Let us no longer inform his friends of it.
13. Do not learn any-more-of-them.
14. Do not laugh at it any-more.
15. Do not let us remember it any longer.
16. Do not help this young-lady *to* any.
17. Do not give the gentleman any.
18. Let us no longer complain of it.

81. [On Col. 4. Accusative; on Col. 3. or 5. Dative; on Col. 7. Genitive or Ablative.]

A.

1. Let us blame him for-it.
2. Send some-of-them to him.
3. Let us give her a few of them.
4. Punish them for it now.
5. Remember [yourself of] it.
6. Let us make-use of them.
7. Send him some as soon as possible.
8. Complain of them, if they misbehave.
9. Inform him of it, if you like [will].
10. Let us gather some of them for [to] her.
11. Let us send them some-of-it.

N.

12. Let us not blame him for it.
13. Do not send him any.
14. Let us give her none-of-them.
15. Do not punish them for it yet.
16. Remember it no longer.
17. Let us not make-use of it again.
18. Send him none of them.
19. Do not complain of them this time.
20. Do not inform him of it.
21. Let us not gather any for her.
22. Do not let us send them any-of-it.

82. [On Col. 3. or 5. 4. 6. or 15.]

A.

1. Take [conduct] me there.
2. Let us go there without her.
3. Come[there]if you are disengaged.
4. Let us sit down there; it is warm.
5. Write to me there.
6. Enjoy yourself there.
7. Think of it[at it]; it is not too late.
8. Let us consent to it in [at] time.
9. Trust [yourself to] him; he is an honest man.
10. Consider it well, I beseech you [of it.]
11. Give yourselves up to it.

N.

12. Do not take [lead] me there.
13. Let us not go there without him.
14. Do not come there again.
15. Let us not sit down there; it is cold.
16. Do not again write to me there.
17. Do not enjoy yourself too much there.
18. Don't think of it any more.
19. Let us not consent to it.
20. Do not trust him, because he is a civil man.
21. Do not consider it any more.
22. Do not give yourselves up to it.

83. [On Col. 1. 2. 3. or 5. 4. 6. 7. 8.]

A.

1. Let him shew it to us.
2. Let her shew it to him.
3. Let them shew them to them.
4. Let them send me some.
5. Let her mention it to them.
6. Let him consent to it.
7. Let them gather some-of-them.
8. Let him remember it.
9. Let him and her complain of it.
10. Let them tell you so.
11. Let her blame you for it.
12. N.—Let him not shew it to us.
13. N.—Let her not shew it to him.

N.

14. Let them never-again shew them to them.
15. Do not let him send me any-more of them.
16. Let her not mention it again to them.
17. Let him not consent to it.
18. Let them not gather any.
19. Let him remember it no longer.
20. Let him and her never complain of them.
21. Let them not tell you so.
22. Let her not blame you for it.

ON THE PRINCIPAL REGULAR, SEMI-IRREGULAR, AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

84.

NOTE.—Irregular Verbs will be found on p. 38. The Preposition which certain French verbs govern when they are followed by an Infinitive, will be found at p. 86.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Will you abstain from doing that? 2. Does he acknowledge having said so? 3. Have they acquired much wealth there? 4. Will you admit them in your family circle? 5. Have they agreed [about it]? 6. Does the doctor allow him to go out? 7. Did they appear to know him? 8. Were they assailed in their entrenchments? 9. Can you tell me the time? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. I promise to abstain from it. 11. He does not remember it. 12. Yes; but they spent it abroad. 13. Why should I not [admit them into it]? 14. They have agreed about nothing. 15. He will [allow it to him] in a few days. 16. I don't know [anything about it]. 17. They had evacuated them before sun-rise. 18. No, sir; my watch has stopped. |
|---|---|

85.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Why does he keep on beating them? 2. Where was [is] she born? 3. What has become of it? 4. Do you believe all [that which] he says? 5. Will they behave better in future? 6. To whom do these handkerchiefs belong? 7. Was it necessary to write to them? 8. Will you read them to-night? 9. Will she boil the potatoes herself? 10. Why did he not break <i>up</i> that battalion? 11. Did you tell him to clear the table? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Probably because they deserve it. 13. She was [is] born in [the county of] Kent. 14. I mislaid it more than a year ago. 15. We never believe anything [of that which] he says. 16. They will [do so], if they look-after [watch] their own interests. 17. They are not worth an answer. 18. We have already perused them. 19. She has already done so. 20. Because the enemy had fled. 21. He will [do so] presently. |
|---|--|

86.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do they [ind.] not grow [collect] much wine in that province? 2. Why do you not collect [pick up] the exercises? 3. When will you come <i>and</i> see us? 4. Have they [f.] not yet come to see you? 5. Why does not your brother come oftener? 6. Do they still complain of you? 7. Have you concealed the particulars from [to] them? 8. When will peace be concluded? 9. Take [conduct] the gentleman into the drawing-room. 10. Have they not yet conquered the enemy? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. They grow a great deal of corn [there]. 12. I have collected them already. 13. We shall come and see you soon. 14. They have not yet arrived. 15. Because he does not live near us. 16. They do not complain any more of me. 17. I conceal nothing from them. 18. As soon as the enemy [shall] have been beaten. 19. The ladies have not yet come-down. 20. I have had no time to read the papers. |
|--|---|

87.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Your sentences were badly constructed. 2. Did he build that boat himself? 3. What does this parcel contain? 4. <i>That</i> [behold which] contradicts what you were saying just now. 5. [Of] what were they conversing <i>about</i>? 6. I do not think he will convince [s.p.] her. 7. Why does she cover them <i>up</i> with <i>straw</i>? 8. Do they not curse their destiny? 9. Did you lose your law-suit? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. How much money did you deduct [from it]? 11. I was told so [active voice]. 12. He has built it in a few days. 13. It contains nothing [of] valuable. 14. What right have you to thwart me? 15. He was telling her all he had heard about her. 16. She refuses to listen <i>to</i> him. 17. She She is afraid that the frost will kill them. 18. I should think so [I believe well]. 19. Yes, they had bribed [corrupted] the witnesses. |
|---|---|

88.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What is the use <i>of</i> denying the truth? 2. Did she describe all she saw? 3. Who has destroyed these palings? 4. Nothing displeases me in her. 5. In what year did they die? 6. How many [have] died of it? 7. The moon will shortly disappear. 8. Did the preacher discourse on the vanities of this world? 9. Do you discover any harm in it? 10. Why do they not do as [what] they are [A.v.] told? 11. Are they not now drinking [to] your health? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. They are afraid of being punished. 13. She was talking German, and I did not understand her. 14. I do not know who destroyed them. 15. You have told me so before. 16. They both [f.] died seven years ago. 17. Pray, let us talk of something else. 18. I shall go to bed earlier than usual. 19. He discoursed on various subjects. 20. I do not take sufficient interest in it. 21. You will do well to ask [it to] them yourself. 22. I thought they were teetotalers. |
|---|--|

89.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Why were they excluded from that body? 2. At what time did they fall asleep? 3. Do they not fear him? 4. Do you feel [the] cold? 5. Will you not feel the effects of their wrath? 6. Tell him to go <i>and</i> fetch my letters from [at] the post. 7. Will you also send [to fetch] <i>after</i> yours? 8. Have they not fought for their [the] flag? 9. Had you followed them long enough? 10. You surely did not foresee everything? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. Because atheists cannot be admitted [into it]. 12. He always falls asleep after meals. 13. He used not to fear us. 14. I am too near the fire [for] to do so. 15. I fear neither their bad faith nor their slander. 16. We shall go <i>and</i> fetch them ourselves. 17. You may [can] bring them at the same time. 18. They have fought for their [the] honour. 19. No, I had not followed them long enough. 20. Everything I foresaw has happened. |
|---|---|

90.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Would you have gone there without me? 2. Would they go if I were to tell [it] them? 3. Do they never go-away before 12 o'clock [p.m.]? 4. Would you have gone-away with him? 5. Why does your sister not go-out every day? 6. Have the children gone-out? 7. Do you buy your coffee ground? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8. Have these knives been ground? 9. What cause have you for hating them? 10. Do they always hold such protracted sittings? 11. I should not have gone there without you. 12. They will probably go to-morrow afternoon. 13. They may [can] remain as long as they please [will]. 14. I shall be going-away at $\frac{1}{4}$ to 4. |
|--|---|

91.

1. You will incur their displeasure.
2. Why do you not hold-your-tongue?
3. All that will have injured them.
4. Has she not instructed them by her example?
5. Why do you not interfere in that quarrel?
6. Do you never interrupt us?
7. Will they introduce those quotations?
8. They will be invested with the highest authority.
9. Let us join the two ends together.
10. Who are those people [who are] laughing?
11. Would you not have known it?
12. I don't think so; I have not offended them.
13. I never do [hold-my-tongue] when I am in the right.
14. Nothing will have injured us.
15. They died too young to profit by it.
16. I never interfere in their differences.
17. I have not interrupted you *for a* [since] long time.
18. They have already introduced them.
19. I am convinced *of the fact* that they deserve it.
20. I do not know how to do it.
21. I do not know them.
22. We should never have known them.

92.

1. She never told-a-lie *in* [of] her life.
2. Those old people have lived long.
3. He will not live much longer.
4. Why does he not maintain order in his class?
5. You are imposing upon me [you make me believe of it].
6. Does she still mimic everybody?
7. Do you know how that spring moves the machine?
8. You will not obtain anything for it.
9. What did he offer you for it?
10. Can you open that cupboard for me?
11. Who has painted these flowers?
12. That's more than I can say of him.
13. I have known them all my life.
14. We hope he won't die.
15. Because the discipline is wretchedly bad.
16. Thanks for [of] your flattering opinion.
17. She is too old for it [that] now.
18. May [can] I ask you to explain it to me?
19. I shall obtain [for it] more than you think.
20. He offered me a few shillings.
21. We have opened it an hour ago.
22. She paints well in water-colours.

93.

1. We pity you *very* much.
2. He does it when it pleases him.
3. What diet did the doctor prescribe for her?
4. Who has been eating those preserved pears?
5. She will pretend to have been with them.
6. Ought not reason to prevail over hackneyed customs?
7. Her experiment has produced *nothing*.
8. Why was he promoted to the House of Lords?
9. They provided for [to] the shortcomings of the law.
10. We never complain of anything.
11. But does that please them?
12. I was [gone] out when he called.
13. We do not care-for sweets.
14. They were shamming [an] illness.
15. Has she not prevailed over you?
16. Whatever agriculture and industry produce.
17. Because he gave his party so much trouble in the Commons.
18. Still, he has been collated to that living.

94.

1. Why do you not put everything in [at] its place?
2. It has been raining very hard [strong].
3. Recollect that you have promised those songs to me.
4. I no longer remember [of] it.
5. Did you solve the difficulty?
6. I hope they have not been running too fast.
7. His horse ran *over* the course in five minutes.
8. They always say the same thing *over and over* again.
9. We have not seen them *for a* [since] long-time.
10. Unfortunately I shall never see them again.
11. She puts everything upside down.
12. They will never reach [to] the acme of perfection.
13. That splendid town was reduced to ashes.
14. But do you not repent [of] it?
15. The fog has turned [resolved itself] into rain.
16. We ran away when we saw him.
17. You told me so ere now.
18. We must satisfy him.
19. Do you see any *of them* here?
20. Why do you not send it [f.] to him?
21. Pray, don't send them back to us.

95.

1. These servants have served us badly.
2. Does not the sun shine for everybody?
3. Do you know that this bottle leaks?
4. The horse sleeps much less than man.
5. She never smiles at me.
6. At what time did you start from Paris?
7. He stirred up the passions of the audience.
8. Everybody has subscribed towards [for] his statue.
9. We shall succour them in case of need.
10. Do you still suffer from it?
11. That style of dress has never suited [to] him.
12. She did not know *how to sew*.
13. We always shun them like the devil [plague].
14. Why do you not sit down?
15. You never told me that.
16. They started with [of] fear.
17. We started at midnight, and the weather was very bad.
18. She was present in court, and was moved to [up to the] tears.
19. Does he succeed [to] in making himself understood [infin.]?
20. Do you think that that remedy will suffice [s.p.]?

96.

1. Nothing he says surprises me.
2. Have they survived their parents?
3. I have always supported them.
4. Why do they take so many of them?
5. Are not those poems badly translated?
6. I have undertaken to do it alone.
7. She has always welcomed us [well].
8. They have withheld my salary up to this day.
9. He hardly ever writes to his friends now.
10. Write these exercises over again.
11. You may then write them out.
12. Those ladies were very much surprised at it.
13. She survived [to] them by [of] many years.
14. Will you not support me?
15. I have no longer taken any.
16. Tell me first who translated them.
17. You undertake too much.
18. She does nothing but read.
19. Did you secure [withhold] any seats?

ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Each Sentence contained in the following Exercises is based, as far as possible, on the Examples which illustrate the various Rules on the use of this Mood. The majority of Verbs in the Principal Clause in these Exercises being given in the Examples, are not repeated in the Vocabulary.

The Subjunctive Mood is not to enter into the composition of those Sentences preceded by an Asterisk (*).

97. [On Rules 66—76.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. I do not admit that such was the case. | 9. He did not allow us to be molested. |
| 2. Let us admit that my letter did not reach them. | 10. It did not appear to have been defined. |
| 3. Admit that they arrived in time. | 11.*It does not appear to have been defined. |
| 4. I should not like to affirm that he has received it [f.]. | 12.*She did not seem to doubt [of] your sincerity. |
| 5.*I am not quite sure of having seen them. | 13. He apprehends your doing it badly. |
| 6. He will agree with us that he has been wrong. | 14. We did not apprehend their asking for it. |
| 7.*We agreed that a bargain should be concluded between us. | 15.*We did not apprehend asking them for it. |
| 8. I should not allow them to be ill-treated. | 16. I do not approve of your selling them. |

98. [On Rules 77—88.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. To avoid her being questioned on that subject. | 9. What a pity you did not succeed him! |
| 2.*To avoid <i>her</i> being questioned, she... | 10. The question is not to let him know of it. |
| 3. We shall avoid being again invited by them. | 11.*The question is to let her know of it. |
| 4.*We shall avoid being met by her. | 12. It is better for him not to write again. |
| 5. Were we to be blamed for it? | 13.*It is better for <i>us</i> not to answer him. |
| 6. How is it that they did not accompany you? | 14. It is difficult to believe that he was ill. |
| 7. It is a good thing that they went away. | 15.*It is difficult not to take any notice of her. |
| 8. It is a pity you did not succeed. | |

99. [On Rules 89—98.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. It was not expedient to reproach them with it. | 8.*It is important to know the temperature. |
| 2.*It will be expedient to reproach them with it. | 9. It is impossible for us to make up for it. |
| 3. It is <i>but</i> fair that you should anticipate his desire. | 10.*It is impossible for them to offer more for it. |
| 4.*Was it fit for us to give it them? | 11. You must never again think of trying to do it. |
| 5. It is hard to think that they will ignore it. | 12. It is just possible that they may throw-out the bill. |
| 6.*It is very hard to remember <i>all</i> about it. | 13. It is <i>more</i> likely than <i>not</i> that the amendments made in the Lords will be accepted. |
| 7. It is important that we should be told of it. | |

100. [On Rules 99—109.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. It was natural that the papers should advocate his release. 2.*It is natural for children to love their parents. 3. It is natural that they should love their mother. 4. You must not be offended at my telling you so. 5. It is necessary that I should show him the way. 6. They should not eat all those strawberries. 7.*You must not be offended at my telling you so. 8.*They should not eat all their raspberries. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. It is of importance that you should leave at day-break. 10.*It is of importance that we take an interest in his success. 11. It is of no use to flatter him. 12. It is preferable not to laugh at her. 13. It is proper for us to honour and love the Jews. 14.*It is proper to assist them in their persecutions. 15. It was probable that the Russians would be victorious. 16.*Is <i>it</i> possible to economize more than that? 17. It is right that they should not have another opportunity. |
|---|--|

101. [On Rules 110—128.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. It is time that we should inquire into that matter. 2.*It is time to fill these decanters with port or sherry. 3. It is not to be presumed that she could have consented to listen to so absurd a proposal. 4. It is to be regretted that they did not like each other. 5. It is unfortunate that she did not meet them. 6.*It is unfortunate not to have obtained a better result. 7. It was most urgent for you not to omit it again. 8.*It is urgent to undertake it forthwith. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. It would have been useless in the extreme to devote so much time to Mathematics. 10.*It is useless to teach him drilling. 11. It is well to be there at the appointed time. 12. Was it not wonderful that he did not apply himself more to Geometry? 13.*It is as well not to attend to his request. 14. It would be-a-wonder if he avoided that danger. 15. The worst of it is that they were in bad health. 16.*The worst of it is to get out of that scrape. |
|--|---|

102. [On Rules 119—131.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Is it he alone who can understand it? 2. There are but few dictionaries which give the definition you require. 3. There was hardly a passenger on board who was not suffering from sea-sickness. 4. There are no novels the reading of which is more dangerous. 5. There was nobody [who was] willing to interfere. 6. There is no doubt as to his being ill-advised. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. No doubt [that] he would be satisfied with it. 8. There is no difficulty which he has not overcome. 9. There was no one who would have believed her. 10. There is nothing which worries them more than to have to reply to such questions. 11. There were only two or three girls in each class who knew their irregular verbs. 12.*I cannot help forgiving them their faults. |
|---|--|

103. [On Rules 132—145.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We were anxious to be invited to sing. 2.*They were anxious to inform you of their decision. 3. Were you apprehensive lest he should divulge your secret? 4. She is astonished at his having been so often absent. 5.*People will be astonished to hear that you have applied to him. 6. I shall be careful that they do not deprive me of it. 7.*We shall be careful not to pick all your mignonette. 8. She was charmed at your having brought so many ladies <i>with you</i>. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. I was not certain that he would accept it. 10. She was delighted that he had refused to go out. 11.*We are delighted at having ceased that correspondence. 12. He was doomed to have his proposal rejected by her. 13. It is doubtful whether he has called on them. 14. Was it doubtful whether they were in the country? 15. I am enraged at having lost so much time there. 16.*We were enraged at having missed the boat. |
|--|---|

104. [On Rules 146—155.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We are far from believing that such an occurrence could have taken place. 2. I was far from thinking that they could have behaved in so extraordinary a manner. 3. They would be glad of his having helped them. 4.*Were you glad to be able to accompany us? 5. She was grieved to hear that they were wrecked after so perilous a voyage. 6. We are highly gratified at your sister having so distinguished herself. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7.*I am highly gratified to be in a position to congratulate your brother on his success. 8. Was he not in a rage at their having deceived him so many times? 9.*I was in a rage at their having slighted me without any cause. 10. Was he not incensed at their having imposed upon him? 11. I am indignant that you should say so. 12.*We are indignant to see them humble themselves. 13. Was she not in raptures at being praised by them? 14.*The ladies were in raptures at seeing us arrive. |
|--|--|

105. [On Rules 156—166.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. It is obvious that they were pleased at his having applied to them. 2.*They will be pleased to be foremost on the list. 3. Your uncle will be sorry that she was abroad. 4.*My aunt will be sorry to part with her house. 5. We were not sure of their winning the game. 6.*We were not sure of winning every game. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. Who told [<i>prendre</i>] you that he was dead? 8.*Who told [<i>dire</i>] you that he was delighted to see us? 9.*We are uncertain about our going there to-morrow. 10.*I am under the apprehension that I shall not succeed. 11. Does she believe that I can finish this work in a day? 12. We never believed that he would ask <i>for it</i>. |
|---|---|

106. [On Rules 166—176.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do-you-really-believe that he will do us that favour? I very much doubt it. 2. I shall beware of his again placing me in a similar predicament. 3. I don't care about your making her so many presents. 4. We do not chose them to know all <i>about it</i>. 5. They were commanded to close their [the] ranks. 6.*The officer commanded them to disperse. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. I complain of my not having found them at home. 8.*I complain of not having met her. 9. Will you not concede that we should have been in the right? 10.*We concede having rejected his offer. 11. I do not conceive how she can have applied for it. 12. I do not conjecture that they can be victorious. 13. You consented to her asking him <i>for</i> his reasons. |
|--|--|

107. [On Rules 176—183.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1.*Your brother consented to deposit the money. 2. Do you want me to write to her? 3.*Do you want to make me write it? 4. I deny that I told him anything of the kind. 5.*I deny having been in the wrong. 6. We do not deny that he acted in a most straightforward manner. 7. Did he deny that these books are more valuable than those in every respect? 8. It will depend on her if we do not receive it. 9.*It will depend on them to make us succeed. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. I do not believe that it was my fault if she did not enjoy herself at the sea-side. 11. How is it that your father has not sent you the money you have been asking <i>for</i>? 12. You deserve to be rewarded for it. 13. I wish you to read the war-news before breakfast. 14.*We were-desirous of reading it first. 15. I disapprove of their having written to each other. 16. She disliked your talking incessantly to those girls. 17. We dislike her being so insolent. |
|---|--|

108. [On Rules 183—189.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you dislike my having availed myself of his offer? 2. I doubt if he will scatter their army. 3. Do you doubt that there is a Supreme Being? 4.*We doubt <i>of our</i> being able to attend. 5. She did not doubt your doing her that service. 6.*I doubt if [si] he will answer you. 7. We shall not endure their worrying us again. 8. We do not entertain the least doubt of your making-up-your-mind to do it. 9.*I did not entertain the least doubt of arriving there before next Sunday. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. She did not entertain the thought that you were anxious to be introduced to them. 11. We entreat you to inform us of their decision. 12.*We entreat you to make up for this deficiency. 13.*I have entreated him to recommend us to them. 14. Do you really expect me to infringe the regulations? 15. We do not expect that you will undertake it. 16. Does she expect you to neglect your duty? 17.*I expect to do the thing myself. |
|--|---|

109. [On Rules 190—195.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did you fancy that he was about to retire? 2. We did not fancy that they would satisfy you. 3. It is not necessary to fancy such things. 4. I fear that they were without means. 5. I fear <i>I shall</i> not [to] be in a position to do anything for that unfortunate family. 6. We dreaded their coming; they are such troublesome boys. 7. We dreaded their not coming; they are such lovely girls. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8. I am not afraid of their troubling you. 9. Are you afraid that those mischievous girls will come and spend the afternoon here? 10. Surely you are not afraid that those gentlemanly boys will pay us a visit? 11. Were you not afraid that they would die? 12. I do not forbid your going out. 13. *I do not forbid you to go out. 14. I have given orders to have a bed prepared for you. 15. *I have given orders to them to prepare a bed for you. |
|--|---|

110. [On Rules 196—204.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. It does not often happen that she is late. 2. I need not be told to beware of him. 3. *We have no need to be there so soon. 4. *I hope they will let me know as soon as possible how everything went off. 5. We implored them not to meddle with it. 6. *I implore of you not to be moved by his eloquence. 7. She must not imagine that she is pretty. 8. *You must not imagine that you are generous. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Do you infer from what he says, that things will turn to their advantage? 10. I shall insist on their being more polite. 11. Did you intend her to remain the whole morning? 12. I do not mean you to sing that song more than once. 13. I know nothing more beautiful. 14. She has gone out alone, as far as I know. 15. Has the postman called? Not that I know of. 16. *I shall know how to behave towards her. |
|---|--|

111. [On Rules 204—216.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. We did not know that she had made a mistake. 2. She did not know that you would offend me. 3. May they flourish for ever! 4. Mind lest they rob you in the night. 5. Mind you attend to your business. 6. *I shall take heed not to betray them. 7. Watch that dog so that he does not run away. 8. We do not object to your kissing those girls. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. I shall not oppose your playing on the piano. 10. It does not please me that you should continue to neglect your duty. 11. *I do not choose to provide for their wants. 12. I should prefer your being less quarrelsome. 13. *I should prefer receiving a letter from her. 14. It was not to be presumed that she remembered all that passed. |
|---|---|

112. [On Rules 217—223.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. You have prevented him from being elected. 2.*You have prevented me from being elected. 3. Will you prevent him from being rewarded? 4.*Will you not prevent him from being punished? 5. I shall prohibit their writing to you. 6. I have prohibited their writing to you. 7. We have requested them to answer us by return of post. 8.*I have requested him to come <i>and</i> spend the evening with us. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. We require him to call us every morning before 6 o'clock. 10.*She requires all boarders to go to bed before a quarter to nine. 11. It looks as if it had been raining all night. 12. See that all the shutters are fastened. 13. There seems to have been much illness [pl.]. 14. There does not seem to me to have been much frost. 15. There seems to me to be much ice: I have been sliding. 16.*It seems to me as if he knew them. |
|--|--|

113. [On Rules 224—236.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I sent word to the gardener to come. 2.*I sent him word to call upon me. 3. We succeeded in having that orphan admitted. 4. I shall not suffer my correspondence to be published. 5. It did not suit me that you went away. 6. I do not suppose it was very cold. 7. He is supposed to have committed-suicide. 8. Do you suspect him to be the inventor of it? 9.*I suspect that he wanted to cheat you. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Take care that she knows nothing of it. 11.*I shall take care not to tell her a word of it. 12. Did you think he would be so obstinate? 13. I did not think that these girls were so giddy. 14. Would you take such an interest in her? 15.*I was thinking of doing it myself. 16. I did not understand how you could have done such a thing. 17. I shall wait till you return. 18. We did not wait till she had written. |
|---|---|

114. [On Rules 237—255.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you want us to do that message now? 2. I don't want them to return before next week. 3.*I want to get up early to-morrow. 4. We will have you write oftener. 5. Does he insist on our sending it back? 6.*We will go there every day. 7. Do you wish us to come again? 8.*I wish <i>very</i> much to meet them again. 9. Before we wrote it to her. 10. For fear it should be too late. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. However little you care for her. 12. However pretty that girl may be. 13. In case you should have omitted it. 14. In order that you may be happier. 15. Instead of his having been attached to us. 16. It is enough for him that he was saved. 17. It is not that she wanted to be his partner. 18. It suffices for you to have thought of it. 19. Lest it should break on the journey. |
|--|---|

115. [On Rules 256—271.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Not that I am aware of. 2. Notwithstanding your having informed him of it. 3. We should have left in spite of them. 4. Provided he fulfils his promise. 5. You told me often enough, so that I shall not again forget to do it. 6. So that we may rely upon you. 7.* They have been working so well, that I am satisfied with them. 8. Suppose it were raining. 9. Unless you undertake to settle it amicably. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. We shall remain in London until we hear from you. 11. Whether they go out or remain indoors. 12. Without my having known it. 13. Although it is but 12 o'clock, and [although it is] consequently not too late. 14. I shall not write before he returns. 15. If I do not arrive in time, and if you should be anxious to see me, pray send me a telegram. 16. In order that she may read and reflect on it. |
|---|---|

116. [On Rules 272—287.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Lest you should ask me for it, and I should be unable to send it to you. 2. Manage [do] so that I receive your letters in time. 3. Supposing such a thing were to happen. 4. I shall not move, unless I am requested or compelled to do it. 5. Wait until it has struck 11 [o'clock]. 6. Whether it was you or I who said so. 7. However profitable their business may be. 8. However cruelly I may have been treated. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. He is looking for a family where there are no children to disturb him. 10.* He has taken apartments in a small village, where there are few children. 11. Whatever their influence may be. 12. Whatever great statesmen Fox and Pitt may have been. 13. Whatever you may say, I am right. 14. We shall not start to-day, whatever she may think of it. 15. It matters little to me, whatsoever you say. |
|--|--|

117. [On Rules 288—299.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. I am looking for an edition of Shakespeare in which there are no misprints. 2. We want several pairs of boots, which we can wear without their hurting us. 3.* I like the boots which I bought of you the other day and which I can easily put on. 4. We do not know of any grammar which has given so many rules. 5.* We have one, which has given them long ago. 6.* Whoever has bought it, must pay for it. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. We should like to meet with servants whom we can safely leave in our absence. 8.* We have two [of them] whom we can leave at home, because they are trustworthy. 9.* He is the first who mentioned it. 10. Is this the last book you bought? 11.* He was the last friend we left in London. 12. It is the best dictionary I ever saw. 13.* It was the best of all those I ever used. 14. The only work they care for. 15.* She is the only companion I have. |
|--|---|

118. [On Col. 9. 11. 15. 17.]

ON THE ADVERB.

NOTE.—1. Each Sentence must contain a Participle Past. 2. Adverbs preceded by an * are to be placed at the beginning of the Sentence. 3. No Verb is to be used in the Subjunctive Mood.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. I saw them nevertheless. | 11. I have not seen them at all. |
| 2. We have moreover spoken to her. | 12. He especially invited her to dinner. |
| 3. Why didn't you invite them then? | 13. He, perhaps, did not see us. |
| 4. We have even written to her. | 14. She ate all the more for it. |
| 5. You will* nevertheless have lost it. | 15. You were almost always hungry. |
| 6. He has* perhaps not seen her. | 16. He no longer looked-at her. |
| 7. She has perhaps never seen them. | 17. We had enough of them. |
| 8. They have perhaps admired themselves too much. | 18. They went nowhere together. |
| 9. We must, however, have met her. | 19. We met her yesterday. |
| 10. She hardly ever knew her lessons. | 20. She did not see anybody there. |
| | 21. We have seen but few there. |

119.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. You should have applied elsewhere. | 12. They came back the day before yesterday. |
| 2. I did not see them to-day. | 13. Did you write to them yesterday? |
| 3. We have been walking too much. | 14. She only called here. |
| 4. She walked a great deal too much. | 15. She called only here. |
| 5. They must have known her well. | 16. We received more of them. |
| 6. She and I [we] went nowhere. | 17. We received more than she <i>did</i> . |
| 7. Nobody invited us. | 18. What did you do there? |
| 8. I often used to talk to them. | 19. Did those ladies call here? |
| 9. I am often afraid of being late. | 20. I did not go there again. |
| 10. We saw them more often than he. | 21. I used not to know either. |
| 11. Her sisters received but a few shillings. | 22. I neither read nor wrote. |

120. [On Col. 13.]

ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

NOTE.—Sixty Exercises on the Participle Past having already been given, it has been deemed unnecessary to set here more than the following nine exercises.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Supposing it were too late. | 11. Those wants succeeded each other. |
| 2. Why should your sisters have written to each other? | 12. We never sent them back to them, |
| 3. She had not then sent them [f.] to me. | 13. We sent them back their novels. |
| 15 | 14. We sent them back to their friends. |
| 4. The letter we had read to each other. | 15. We were pleased to tell you so. |
| 5. Not including the sums he owes me. | 16. We were delighted to inform you at the opening of this meeting that... |
| 6. We have forbidden them to go out. | 17. Past the time you will not be admitted. |
| 7. We have always defended them. | 18. When once the time is past, you will be excluded. |
| 8. Their sisters have not spoken to each other. | 19. Whose quarrels did he espouse? |
| 9. We fancied that he would have succeeded. | 20. How many soldiers died on the battle-field! |
| 10. He and I [we] always suited each other. | |

121.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. The bills which we had [devoir] to pay. 2. The thanks we owed him. 3. She was more clever than we thought. 4. How much did those houses cost you? 5. The messages they asked me to deliver. 6. How many birds did he kill? 7. We made the girls dance. 8. How many quartetts they played! 9. The remarks we ventured to make. 10. The letters I saw her write. 11. The books which we thought would be approved. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. The excellent lessons I received from him. 13. We often walked alone. 14. We have walked many miles. 15. How many of them they have bought! 16. We have sent them to Paris. 17. We have sent them their books. 18. They did not write to each other. 19. They did not give me any. 20. They applied to us. 21. They addressed those letters. 22. They addressed those letters to each other. 23. What advantages would have been derived from it? |
|---|--|

122.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. The dresses they have had made. 2. We have heard her play. 3. We have not heard it played. 4. The message I told him to deliver. 5. She had not subscribed to it. 6. We have never seen her before. 7. We have never yet spoken to her. 8. I have taken all the steps I could. 9. The loaves we have been weighing. 10. The difficulties which we foresaw we should have. 11. Those prisoners whom we heard being sentenced. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Those judges whom we heard delivering judgments. 13. The services we received from her. 14. What heavy rains we had this winter! 15. Is this the letter you began to write? 16. Why did you not weigh those loaves? 17. The coats we have had made for us. 18. The region which has formed them. 19. They must have read many books. 20. It was a quarter past four. |
|---|--|

123.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. How many ships [pl.] are lost every year? 2. The hot weather [pl.] which succeeded the rain. 3. All the riches they wished. 4. Their troops marched all night. 5. He was ill all the years he has been writing. 6. What exercises did she give you to copy? 7. The hot weather we had [faire, <i>impers.</i>]. 8. They have given each other's presents back. 9. Their duplicity has injured them much. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. She will never be believed. 11. They have collected our exercises. 12. The fortnight they lived here. 13. What trouble that invention cost him! 14. They surrendered to us. 15. They have rendered <i>an</i> account to each other. 16. The exercises which I collected. 17. We persuaded each other that he was wrong. 18. How many accidents have happened! 19. The forts they have erected. 20. Would you not have been convinced? |
|--|---|

124.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What efforts have been necessary ! 2. We went <i>and</i> fetched them <i>away</i>. 3. Children accustomed to work. 4. The lands remained uncultivated. 5. We saw them drawing those sketches. 6. We saw them being drawn by her. 7. The history we have been able to read. 8. Considering the high prices of bread. 9. Many ages have passed [impers.]. 10. Lands much less fertile than we thought they were. 11. As many battles he fought, as many victories he gained. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. The eclipses there have been. 13. The barristers we heard pleading. 14. They had been drinking too much of it. 15. A mistake which has crept into my account. 16. All the improvements he would have wished. 17. Except the potato <i>plant</i>. 18. With the exception of the viper. 19. She has not walked much. 20. The small quantity of fruit [pl.] we had. 21. Lands we ought to have cultivated. 22. People gave us nothing. |
|---|---|

125.

Insert some of the Participles past given, and supply the rules for their agreement.

Attribué, couru, craint, cru, désiré, donné, duré, essayé, été, eu, fait, montré, obtenu, osé, permis, plu, prévu, su, vaincu, voulu.

1. La perte de la bataille est — au peu d'habileté qu'a — le général. 2. Est-ce là la part que vous a — le ciel dans la distribution de ses faveurs? 3. Moins nos armées ont — de gloire, plus elles en ont —. 4. Pourquoi, mesdames, ne vous êtes-vous pas — ces concessions? 5. Nous avons — dans ce voyage tous les ennuis que nous avons —. 6. Cependant ces langues que vous n'avez pas — que j'étudiasse m'ont — fort utiles. 7. Notre victoire a — plus grande que nous ne l'avions —. 8. Ces desseins-là, ils n'auraient jamais — les concevoir. 9. Elles ont — à leurs enfants l'éducation que leur a — leur position. 10. Notre pays a — les plus grands dangers pendant les années qu'a — la guerre. 11. Ils se sont — à rendre la mort aimable. 12. Voilà un des plus grands phénomènes qu'il y ait jamais —.

126.

Chargé, découvert, dû, écrit, empêché, été, étonné, eu, fait, fallu, fui, ignoré, ouï, promis, répandu, resté, rétabli, sorti, valu, voulu.

1. Quels honneurs vous a — ce travail extraordinaire? 2. Combien d'erreurs n'a-t-on pas — dans les travaux qu'on les avait — de faire! 3. Le peu de pluie que nous avons — ne nous a pas — de sortir. 4. Les maintes traductions qu'on en a — sont — — jusqu'à ce jour. 5. Oubliez-vous les bontés qu'ils vous ont — sentir? 6. Ils ont — plus de progrès en cent ans que nous n'en avons — en quatre siècles. 7. Quels bénéfices ces spéculations doivent leur avoir —! 8. Les grandes chaleurs qu'il y a — ne m'ont pas même —. 9. Le peu de communications qu'il y a — entre elles ne nous ont point —. 10. Les arts et les sciences que ces rois ont — naître. 11. Que de peuples différents n'en est-il point —! 12. Cette récompense lui est bien —, puisqu'elle lui a — —.

127.

Amaigri, appliqué, arrogant, arrosé, convenu, couru, dédaigné, demeuré, désiré, donné, dormi, dû, écrit, fait, laissé, péri, placé, planté, rapporté, souhaité, survenu, tourné, valu, voulu.

1. La France s'est ainsi — à la tête des pays producteurs de cette plante.
 2. Ces matières que l'on a jusqu'ici — seraient fructueusement — à la science.
 3. Toutes les fleurs que nous avons — ont — faute d'être —. 4. Quand la marmotte a — tout l'hiver, elle se réveille considérablement —. 5. Les bêtes que les chasseurs ont — ne se sont pas — prendre. 6. Leur sœur et la nôtre se sont — bien des fois. 7. Les Hollandais s'étaient — le monopole du commerce des épices. 8. Il est — plusieurs accidents pendant la fête que nous leur avons —. 9. Nous avons — un herbier avec les plantes que nous avons —. 10. Les terres qu'ils auraient — fertiliser sont — incultes. 11. Les affaires n'ont pas — comme nous l'aurions —. 12. La profession que ses parents auraient — qu'il embrassât, ne lui a pas —.

128.

Agi, aperçu, attaqué, combattu, couru, décomposé, déniché, dévoré, donné, dû, échoué, essoufflé, été, eu, fait, instruit, nui, oui, présumé, pris, rendu, sacrifié, sorti, vu.

1. Le tribunal, — les parties dans leurs conclusions, a — son jugement.
 2. Les études que nous avons — qu'ils feraient, leur auraient — bien nécessaires. 3. Ces enfants n'ont pas — pour leurs parents tous les égards qu'ils auraient —. 4. Les robes qu'elles ont — à réparer, ne leur ont pas encore —. 5. Nous en avons — des nids d'oiseaux, mais nous n'en avons pas —. 6. Les bourgeons de cet arbre sont — depuis quelques jours. 7. Tous ceux qui se sont — à la science et l'ont —, ont — dans leur tentative. 8. Plusieurs grands hommes se sont — eux-mêmes. 9. Les quelques centaines de pas que nous avons — nous ont tout —. 10. Jusqu'à ce que les oiseaux carnassiers les aient — ou qu'ils soient —. 11. Ceux-là ont bien —, qui ont — leur vie pour leur patrie. 12. Ils se sont — par leurs procédés.

129. [On Col. 16.]

ON THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Does he acknowledge having received your note? | 11. They were ashamed to ask him for it. |
| 2. I should advise you to answer him. | 12. You are at liberty to consult him. |
| 3. My advice would be not to answer her. | 13. I was bent upon travelling also. |
| 4. Have you agreed to let the house? | 14. It would have been better not to have gone out to-day. |
| 5. Your brother did not appear to be satisfied. | 15. Be careful not to offend him. |
| 6. Did they assist you in explaining it to her? | 16. We have determined not to read it. |
| 7. Would they have attempted to deny it? | 17. Were they disposed to go out for a walk? |
| 8. Avoid having anything to do with him. | 18. He would fain have answered them. |
| 9. I shall never be able to learn it by heart. | 19. She was always fond of teasing him. |
| 10. We were afraid of irritating them. | 20. They will be in no hurry to pay us another visit. |
| | 21. I have always been inclined to serve you. |

130.

1. Would it not be more advisable to keep silent?
2. They are obstinately bent upon refusing our request.
3. You never cease asking me the same question.
4. Let us challenge them to do it before us.
5. How often do they come and dine with you?
6. Did the general not command them to fire?
7. Scarcely had they commenced firing, when it began to rain.
8. His dishonesty compelled me to take legal proceedings against him.
9. I complained of having been wrongfully dismissed.
10. They have not yet condescended to pay him the salary due.
11. Allow me to congratulate you in having succeeded.
12. He continues to be in good health.
13. They continued to play chess until half-past eleven.
14. Would you have dared to tell him so?
15. Had they decided to run away?
16. I may *take* delight in thwarting them.
17. Used they not to deny all that was imputed to them?

131.

1. I will entrust you with the care of managing it.
2. We expect to see him arrive shortly.
3. They failed to do their duty.
4. They failed in doing their exercise; it was too late.
5. He fancies that he is able to impose on me.
6. He came in when I had finished writing.
7. I shall give him notice not to insult us again.
8. We are going to see a volunteer review.
9. We shall go and see the synagogue.
10. Why does she hesitate in entrusting it to you?
11. Do you not intend getting a prize?
12. Did you not invite us to come *and* dine with you?
13. We invited them to dine.
14. He left me to do what I liked.
15. They are longing to hear *from you* [of your news].
16. I always make *it* a point not to be late.
17. Do you mean to say that I am in the wrong?

132.

1. I do not remember ever having said so.
2. They set about playing [at the] cards the whole evening.
3. Why spend your time in studying that dreary subject?
4. When will he stop being offended at trifles?
5. I have succeeded in succeeding him.
6. We shall eventually succeed in beating him.
7. They were summoned to appear in court.
8. I shall take care to let him know.
9. I shall take care not to let him know [it].
10. She took it into her head to blame me for it.
11. She has not yet taken the trouble to answer him.
12. Who is teaching him to play the violin?
13. I was thinking of taking the matter in hand.
14. They threatened him with being arrested.
15. Why does he trouble himself about writing to us?
16. We agreed to play these quintetts.

133.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. They would be indignant to hear you speak thus. | 10. I believe <i>I am</i> [of being] able to guess it. |
| 2. It is repugnant to one's feelings to hear it said <i>so</i> . | 11. Do you blame me for having been so lenient? |
| 3. The question is to know how she will act. | 12. He boasts of being a good oarsman. |
| 4. It is sufficient for us to have warned them. | 13. I do not call to mind ever having omitted it. |
| 5. The people were unable to assemble in force. | 14. When will he cease to ask us to assist him? |
| 6. She was quite willing to acquaint them of it. | 15. The difficulty will consist in making it out. |
| 7. I cannot bear to hear you talk such nonsense. | 16. I detest receiving his approval. |
| 8. Pray bear in mind not to misinterpret it. | 17. We do dislike to converse with them. |
| 9. It would ill become us to oppress them. | 18. She dreaded being scolded. |
| | 19. He was exposed to meeting with a rebuff. |

134.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Where are the bills I have given you to pay? | 9. We ordered them to prepare supper at once. |
| 2. He glories in having succeeded so well. | 10. Why prevent them from being received there? |
| 3. You told me that you had just been dining! | 11. We did not recollect having met her before. |
| 4. He declared that he would have to resign. | 12. Refrain from taking such rash measures. |
| 5. Will you allow me to help you to come down? | 13. They will ever repent of having avoided their society. |
| 6. Do you still [always] intend to pursue that plan? | 14. I would scorn to oppress the innocent. |
| 7. Did he not lower himself to commit that infamous act? | 15. Let us strive to satisfy our superiors. |
| 8. I shall make bold to assure him of the contrary. | 16. People suspected him of being a political refugee. |

135. [On Col. 18. 19. 20. 21.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. It is he who has so often deceived us. | 10. He and she were not at home then. |
| 2. It was she who complained of him. | 11. Did you see him or her? |
| 3. He, guilty of such neglect! | 12. I neither saw him, nor her. |
| 4. I, who am ever ready to assist them. | 13. He suspects us! |
| 5. Neither they, nor we heard it. | 14. They! they would not believe it. |
| 6. We should have done without them. | 15. I have suspected him. |
| 7. You cannot [do without them]. | 16. Is it they who have applied to you? |
| 8. She received those pears from him, and not from you. | 17. We shall never be afraid of him. |
| 9. People could not be better at home. | 18. They alone would have done it. |
| | 19. We like both you and him. |
| | 20. When will you be at home? |
| | 21. She did it herself. |

136.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. It is <i>either</i> you, or I. 2. He used to read much better than she. 3. He and I went <i>away</i> on that day. 4. It is we who have blamed him for it. 5. Do not speak to us, but to him. 6. This girl is not so tall as he. 7. You alone did not understand us. 8. Come and sit near me. 9. I had rather sit near her. 10. Nobody has need to be afraid of them. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. You must not apply to him, but to her. 12. We came in before them. 13. Why walk out without her? 14. He alone refused to accept it. 15. He and they are known to me. 16. I shall gather those roses for her. 17. What am I to do [me]? 18. Do as they <i>do</i>. Do as I <i>do</i>. 19. So do I. [And I also.] 20. It is not he who is knocking. 21. He is much poorer than they. 22. They ill ! I doubt it. |
|--|---|

137.

ON INVERSION.

[Rewrite the following sentences, and replace all inverted phrases in their grammatical order.]

1. La science ne reconnaît pas dans les animaux, premiers habitants du monde, des animaux du midi qu'aurait séparés du centre de leur population primitive le déchirement des continents. D. Nisard.

2. Ne pût-il* l'éteindre [la soif du sang] qu'en détruisant, dès leur naissance, la race entière des monstres qu'il [le tigre] produit ! Buffon.

3. C'est sur cette côte inhospitalière que se sont d'abord concentrés les efforts de l'industrie humaine. De Tocqueville.

4. Dans ces journées rarement interrompues, dans les longues veilles de ses nuits, il [Milton] méditait des vers sur un sujet si longtemps déposé dans son âme, et qu'avaient mûri, pour ainsi dire, tous les événements et toutes les passions de sa vie. Villemain.

* Plût à Dieu qu'il ne pût = Would that he were prevented from . . .

138.

1. C'est la seule volupté d'ailleurs que puissent envier à ceux qui ont le malheur de vivre longtemps ceux qui ont le bonheur de mourir jeunes. C. Nodier.

2. Sa patience [Washington] fut mise à une des plus rudes épreuves que puisse subir un homme responsable tout à la fois de son armée et de sa cause. C. de Rémusat.

3. Les prairies, rapidement inclinées sous mes pieds, se déroulent là-bas avec noblesse ; elles étendent dans le vallon leur tapis, que blanchit encore la rosée glacée du matin. George Sand.

4. Je fais donc profession de croire que les grandes vérités qu'a déjà développées et que pourra développer encore la philosophie moderne sous les formes qui lui sont propres, sont si loin d'être opposées aux vérités que contient le christianisme, qu'au contraire, selon moi, toute vraie philosophie est en germe dans les mystères chrétiens. Victor Cousin.

139.

1. La journée entière [15 avril, 1355] fut employée à l'instruction du procès du doge. Le Conseil des Dix, dont une pareille cause relevait si haut l'importance, demanda que vingt patriciens lui fussent adjoints pour le jugement d'un aussi grand coupable [Marino Faliero]. **P.-A. Daru.**

2. Tournez les yeux en dehors et au delà du christianisme : qu'ont produit depuis vingt siècles les autres religions ? La religion brahmique, la religion musulmane et toutes les autres religions qui règnent encore aujourd'hui sur la terre, que produisent-elles ? Ici une dégradation profonde, là une tyrannie sans bornes. **Victor Cousin.**

3. De cette familiarité cordiale et modérée naîtrait, sans grossièreté, sans fausseté, sans contrainte, un conflit badin plus charmant cent fois que la politesse, et plus fait pour lier les cœurs. **J.-J. Rousseau.**

4. Enfin parut en France un génie puissant et hardi [Descartes], qui entreprit de secouer le joug du prince de l'école [Aristote]. **Le P. Guénard.**

140.

1. L'hirondelle se fixe de préférence aux édifices abandonnés, dont nous nous sommes fatigués de remuer les ruines, et que n'inquiète plus le mouvement d'une population turbulente. **C. Nodier.**

2. Pour cela que choisit-il ? douze disciples grossiers, ignorants, faibles, imparfaits, mais qu'il remplit tellement de son esprit, que dans un jour, dans un moment, il les rend propres à l'exécution de ce grand ouvrage. **Bourdaloue.**

3. J'essaierai de montrer ce qu'ils sont devenus et ce qu'ils ont fait dans l'époque qu'on a coutume d'appeler les temps de barbarie, c'est-à-dire tant que se prolonge le chaos de l'invasion. **Guizot.**

4. Ils n'avaient de différends que ceux qu'une douce et tendre amitié faisait naître ; et, dans l'endroit du pays le plus écarté, séparés de leurs compatriotes indignes de leur présence, ils [les Troglodytes] menaient une vie heureuse et tranquille : la terre semblait produire d'elle-même, cultivée par ces vertueuses mains. **Montesquieu.**

141.

1. Avec moins de force d'organe, moins d'étendue dans la voix, moins de variété dans les sons, le serin a plus d'oreille, plus de facilité d'imitation, plus de mémoire que le rossignol. **Buffon.**

2. Ils [les grands écrivains du XVII^e siècle] ne se réfugiaient plus tout entiers dans les souvenirs et dans l'idiome des Romains, comme avaient fait autrefois quelques hommes supérieurs, lassés de la barbarie de leurs contemporains. **Villemain.**

3. On le condamna à deux mois de prison, que devait suivre un an d'exil. **P.-A. Daru.**

4. Et les ronces, toutes chargées de flocons de laine qu'y ont laissés les brebis en passant, s'empourprent de petites mûres sauvages d'une agréable saveur. **George Sand.**

5. Il n'en sort ni fumée, ni bruit, ni habitants. **Chateaubriand.**

142.

1. Que vous importe ce mélange de citations, d'anecdotes, de souvenirs personnels, de rêveries aimables, de réflexions spontanées? **P. Chasles.**

2. Il n'y avait personne dans la ville qui ne fût persuadé qu'il n'eût un trésor particulier, une cachette pleine de louis, et ne se donnât nuitamment les ineffables jouissances que procure la vue d'une grande masse d'or.

H. de Balzac.

3. Alors seulement, et ni plus tôt, ni plus tard, ce que les philosophes n'ont osé tenter; ce que les prophètes, ni le peuple juif, lorsqu'il a été le plus protégé et le plus fidèle, n'ont pu faire: douze pêcheurs envoyés par Jésus-Christ, et témoins de sa résurrection, l'ont accompli.

Bossuet.

4. Presque tous [les biographes de Cromwell] se sont bornés à reproduire sur des dimensions plus étendues le simple et sinistre profil qu'en a tracé Bossuet, de son point de vue moderne et catholique, de sa chaire d'évêque appuyée au trône de Louis XIV.

Victor Hugo.

143.

1. Est-ce à moi de mourir? Tran-
quille je m'endors,
Et tranquille je veille; et ma
veille aux remords

Ni mon sommeil ne sont en
proie. **André Chénier.**

2. Célibat! célibat! le lien conjugal
À ton indépendance offre-t-il rien
d'égal? **C. Delavigne.**

3. Oh! que j'honore en sa misère
Cet aveugle errant sur la terre,
Sous le fardeau des ans pressé,
Jadis si grand par la victoire,
Maintenant puni de sa gloire,
Qu'un pauvre enfant déjà lassé,
Quand le jour est presque effacé,
Conduit pieds nus pendant l'orage.

Ducis.

4. Ces poèmes sans prix, où son
illustre main
D'un pinceau sans pareil a peint
l'esprit romain,
Rendront de leur beauté votre
oreille idolâtre,

Et sont aujourd'hui l'âme et
l'amour du théâtre. **Rotrou.**

5. D'obscurs travaux de mon délire
Tiennent les élans enchaînés,
Et je ne dirai qu'à ma lyre
Mes vers à l'oubli destinés.

E. Deschamps.

6. Pensez-vous qu'un monarque ait
droit d'examiner
Ce que veut l'Éternel, ce qu'il
peut ordonner?

M.-J. Chénier.

144.

1. Je sais des gens de cour quelle
est la politique. **Corneille.**

2. Plutôt que dans mes mains par
Joad soit livré

Un enfant qu'à son Dieu Joad a
consacré,

Tu lui verras subir la mort la
plus terrible. **Racine.**

3. Morte! dit le mari, c'est un bon-
heur pour elle;

Mais pour ses deux enfants quelle
perte cruelle! **C. Lafont.**

4. Entre mes doigts guide ce lin docile,
Pour mon enfant tourne, léger
fuseau;

Seul tu soutiens sa vie encore
débile,

Tourne sans bruit auprès de son
berceau. **Mme Tastu.**

5. Et sais-tu pas pour lui jusqu'où
va mon ardeur? **Molière.**

6. Moi-même entre ses bras si le flot
m'a jeté. **Ducis.**

7. Je vais où le regard voit briller
l'espérance,

Je vais où va le son qui de mon
luth s'élance,

Où sont allés tous mes soupirs!
A. de Lamartine.

145.

1. Dans des pièges trompeurs si ma vertu sommeille. **Ducis.**
2. Comme ils sont altérés ! Ah ! si du moins l'aurore,
Demain, mouillait de pleurs la soif qui les dévore. **S. Pécontal.**
3. De tant de jours de deuil, de crainte et d'espérance,
De tant d'efforts perdus, de tant de maux soufferts,
En es-tu lasse enfin, pauvre terre de France,
Et de tes vieux enfants l'éternelle inconstance
Laissera-t-elle un jour le calme à l'univers ? **A. de Musset.**
4. Apprendre à se connaître est le premier des soins
Qu'impose à tout mortel la majesté suprême. **La Fontaine.**
5. Comme un matin pour eux est toute une saison. **Saintine.**
6. Rome à qui vient ton bras d'immoler mon amant ! **Corneille.**
7. Ceux de qui la conduite offre le plus à rire
Sont toujours sur autrui les premiers à redire. **Molière.**
8. Cet homme, ainsi bâti, fut député des villes
Que lave le Danube. **La Fontaine.**

146.

1. Dans une outre, on a dit qu'Éole Renferma tous les vents divers. **Desmahis.**
2. C'est ainsi que, peuplant l'étendue infinie,
Dieu répandit partout l'esprit, l'âme et la vie. **De Lamartine.**
3. Aux auteurs de leurs jours prodiguant leur tendresse,
Sous le fardeau des ans s'ils viennent à fléchir,
Elles seront l'appui de leur faible vieillesse,
Et moi, je vais mourir ! **C.-L. Mollevault.**
4. Hélas ! que mes tristes pensées
M'offrent des maux bien plus cuisants ! **J.-B. Rousseau.**
5. D'Emma mourante elle a chassé l'image. **Parny.**
6. Seigneur, ainsi qu'à vous, la liberté m'est chère. **Voltaire.**
7. Ce que devaient, dans Rome, exécuter leurs bras,
Tandis qu'au Capitole agiraient vos soldats. **Lafosse.**
8. Le sang coulait sans gloire en nos champs désolés,
Je voulus, des combats leur ouvrant la carrière,
Offrir un but plus noble à cette ardeur guerrière. **Ancelot.**

147.

1. Et moi, qui vois couler cette humble destinée
Au penchant du devoir doucement entraînée. **Sainte-Beuve.**
2. Il pleura. Larme sainte, à l'amitié donnée,
Oh ! vous ne fûtes point aux vents abandonnée. **A. de Vigny.**
3. En baignant son visage,
Mes pleurs du sentiment lui rendirent l'usage. **Racine.**
4. Devant lui sont ces dieux, ces brûlants séraphins,
À qui de l'univers il commet les destins.
Il parle, et de la terre ils vont changer la face ;
Des puissances du siècle ils retranchent la race,
Tandis que les humains, vils jouets de l'erreur,
Des conseils éternels accusent la hauteur. **Voltaire.**
5. Ton regard abattu
Du regard de Méduse a la triste vertu.
L'auditeur qu'ont glacé tes sens et ta présence. **F. de Neufchateau.**
6. Mais pour bien mettre ici leur crasse en tout son lustre,
Il faut voir du logis sortir ce couple illustre. **Boileau.**

148.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>1. Moi, que d'un faux aveu sa voix
flatteuse abuse,
S'il craint qu'en sommeillant un
rêve ne l'accuse. C. Delavigne.</p> <p>2. Alors à ce doux nom je croyais
voir soudain
S'entr'ouvrir à mes yeux le céleste
jardin. A. Barbier.</p> <p>3. Loin de vous une enfance molle !
Du laboureur, du bûcheron,
Suivez, enfant, la rude école ;
L'homme fort peut seul être bon.
V. de Laprade.</p> <p>4. Témoin nous que punit la romaine
avarice. La Fontaine.</p> | <p>5. O vous que dans ce temps, si
fertile en naufrages,
De la fortune encore enivrent les
faveurs. Viennet.</p> <p>6. À ta faible raison garde-toi de te
rendre :
Dieu t'a fait pour l'aimer, et non
pour le comprendre. Voltaire.</p> <p>7. Me présenta le sang de mon fils
massacré :
Fais-y couler le sien, que proscriit
ma colère,
Et qu'à longs traits encor ma
soif s'y désaltère. Lemercier.</p> |
|--|--|

ON THE IDIOMATIC TENSES OF VERBS. ACTIVE VOICE.

149.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p>1. You are to tell him so.</p> <p>2. We are now to ask you how...</p> <p>3. We have good news to tell you.</p> <p>4. You will have to write oftener.</p> <p>5. We are going to pay her a visit.</p> <p>6. We have had to tell them the
truth.</p> <p>7. She has just fetched those rings
<i>away.</i></p> <p>8. They have just been walking <i>out.</i></p> <p>9. We have been going to pull it
down.</p> <p>10. They have so often been going to
write to us.</p> | <p>11. They came because I was to sing.</p> <p>12. If I was to read everything to
you...</p> <p>13. We were not to send him any
more.</p> <p>14. She will have to go out without
us.</p> <p>15. Had you to finish that work
alone?</p> <p>16. Were you not to inform his sister
of it?</p> <p>17. They had not to spend their time
at home.</p> <p>18. I have had to explain myself.</p> |
|---|--|

150.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p>1. We were to answer all inquiries.</p> <p>2. She had to give up all hopes.</p> <p>3. I was going to see her husband,
who is ill.</p> <p>4. As soon as I had had to express
my opinion.</p> <p>5. He shall remain where he is.</p> <p>6. When he happened to remember
her last words.</p> <p>7. You shall hereafter be more
punctual.</p> <p>8. We shall have had to congratu-
late her.</p> <p>9. He will have had to go.</p> | <p>10. But I will speak to both <i>of them.</i></p> <p>11. We may have met some gipsies
in the wood.</p> <p>12. She can talk French quite as well
as he <i>can.</i></p> <p>13. You must ask Mr. ..., senior, to
be your partner.</p> <p>14. They must be talking nonsense.</p> <p>15. I may have had less knowledge
than they.</p> <p>16. Surely she cannot have said that.</p> <p>17. They must have been telling lies.</p> <p>18. Were you not about to retire?</p> <p>19. You must be mistaken.</p> |
|---|--|

151.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. We could have done much better. | 9. We should have added to it. |
| 2. You ought to have watched those people closely. | 10. They will attend provided they are invited. |
| 3. They might have encouraged him in his endeavours. | 11. Would you consent in case I mentioned it? |
| 4. She ought to have come before dinner. | 12. Whether you have [s. m.] written or no, it does not matter. |
| 5. I should have had to engage a tutor for him. | 13. Will she not wait for us if the weather be fine? |
| 6. He should go and explain the matter to them. | 14. If I had known it, it would not have happened. |
| 7. We should have had to fill up these pages. | 15. Had you not to reply to her? |
| 8. You might have remained considerably longer. | 16. If he have forgotten <i>all about</i> it. |
| | 17. Were you to blame me for it! |

152.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. There is no house to let. | 14. Why should she not sing alone? |
| 2. You shall do it as I tell you. | 15. Would you not have us believe it? |
| 3. You will not again ask him <i>for</i> it. | 16. We ought to have been less careless. |
| 4. They must have been sleeping. | 17. I could have told him all that. |
| 5. We would answer him. | 18. If I tell him that you had gone out. |
| 6. We should answer him. | 19. Were you about to retire? |
| 7. If he wrote in his favour. | 20. I have had to explain myself. |
| 8. Has he not just informed us of it? | 21. They had just embarked. |
| 9. She has often been going to mention it. | 22. She was about to renew her application. |
| 10. He will always say what he thinks. | 23. We have only to say so. |
| 11. He shall tell no falsehoods. | 24. It might well have happened. |
| 12. She was not to think of it. | |
| 13. We were going to fetch them. | |

PASSIVE VOICE.

153.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Are you not all to be invited? | 13. This church would have to be pulled down. |
| 2. They are about to be carried away. | 14. When will this song have to be sung? |
| 3. Are they to be told that...? | 15. These papers had to be read by him. |
| 4. Is he to be asked how...? | 16. At what time will it have to be finished? |
| 5. Is the furniture going to be removed? | 17. Will all their time have to be spent there? |
| 6. Will this news have to be sent to her? | 18. He was going to be sent to India. |
| 7. The letter was going to be written. | 19. They would only have to be learned. |
| 8. These bills have had to be paid. | 20. I was about to be asked. |
| 9. That matter will have to be explained. | 21. She shall be rewarded for it. |
| 10. The truth had to be told. | |
| 11. Were they to be written to? | |
| 12. You will have to be asked twice. | |

154.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. All inquiries were to be answered. | 13. Were they not to be congratulated? |
| 2. I was going to be shewn those pictures. | 14. He ought to be requested to be more careful. |
| 3. All hopes are to be given up. | 15. Why should his children be neglected? |
| 4. These toys must be hidden from them. | 16. Why should they have to be neglected? |
| 5. Her husband must be seen at once. | 17. How was I to know that he had to be punished? |
| 6. No such opinions had to be expressed. | 18. Some mistake must have been made. |
| 7. Where are they to be left? | 19. Her pencil-case might have been mended. |
| 8. We may have been told so. | 20. His composition is not to be despised. |
| 9. You might have been aware of it. | 21. You should be made to do it. |
| 10. He cannot be expected to know it. | |
| 11. Some fruit will have had to be gathered. | |
| 12. The rules should be learnt by heart. | |

155.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. It will have to be done much better in future. | 10. There remains to be seen how old they are. |
| 2. These people ought to be closely watched. | 11. All these things will have to be added to it. |
| 3. He might have been encouraged. | 12. Has this subject to be mentioned? |
| 4. His brother should have been allowed to do it. | 13. Are they to be expected? |
| 5. His brother would have been allowed to do it. | 14. He was to be blamed for it? |
| 6. Is all this to be eaten to-day? | 15. When will this have to be done? |
| 7. A tutor will have to be engaged. | 16. Were I to be blamed for it. |
| 8. A tutor must be engaged. | 17. Let him be informed of it. |
| 9. The matter must again be explained to her. | 18. If we had been informed of it. |
| | 19. If we shall have been informed of it. |
| | 20. We will be informed of it. |
| | 21. I ought to have been informed of it. |

156.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Are they not going to be sent to her? | 12. They were about to begin. |
| 2. She shall be rewarded. | 13. Why ought they to have been invited? |
| 3. She will be rewarded. | 14. She will have to be answered. |
| 4. That quack cannot be trusted. | 15. Were I to be told so. |
| 5. When has the work to be finished? | 16. Not having to be acknowledged. |
| 6. They could easily have been learnt by heart. | 17. We should only have to be applied to. |
| 7. It should have been given up. | 18. Having had to be examined. |
| 8. If you should ever be informed of it. | 19. Your sister was not displeased with us. |
| 9. Will not their errors have to be forgiven? | 20. Were we to be punished? |
| 10. Why are they not to be told? | 21. If we were recommended. |
| 11. They have had to be given up. | 22. They may not have been told so. |
| | 23. It might easily have been learnt. |

157.

ON EASY COMPOSITION.

[Learn by heart the following extract, after having translated it.]

A son arrivée dans une ville un bègue s'informa auprès d'un bourgeois qu'il rencontra par hasard, où il voulait aller. Ce bourgeois qui était également bègue, lui répondit le mieux possible, mais toujours en bégayant. L'étranger persuadé qu'il voulait l'insulter, se mit à lui dire des injures; l'autre les lui rendit avec usure, s'imaginant de son côté qu'il ne bégayait que pour le contrefaire. Un passant s'informa de leur querelle, et eut beaucoup de peine à les réconcilier, en leur faisant voir, qu'ils étaient bègues et imbéciles tous les deux.

158.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Did you ever meet with a stammerer? 2. Yes, I often have. 3. What do you think one of them did once? 4. He enquired of a man where he was going to. 5. What did he answer him? 6. He was at some trouble in replying to him. 7. He answered him as well as he could? 8. He was a stammerer himself. 9. Did the stranger feel offended? 10. He was under the impression that the other man wished to insult him. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 11. He began abusing him in his turn. 12. The other man returned his abuse with interest, as you may well imagine. 13. He fancied that the other was mimicking him. 14. Did you never mimic anybody? 15. Tell me how their quarrel was settled. 16. A passer-by made them see their folly. 17. He made himself acquainted with the object of their dispute, and reconciled them. |
|---|--|

159.

[Learn the following questions by heart and translate the answers.]

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Quel verbe a-t-on formé du mot <i>bègue</i>? 3. Que veut dire le substantif <i>bégayement</i>? 5. Qui rencontra-t-il par hasard? 7. Où rencontra-t-il ce bourgeois? 9. Que lui demanda-t-il? 11. Quel défaut ce bourgeois avait-il? 13. Quelle réponse lui fit-il? 15. De quoi le bègue était-il persuadé? 17. Comment l'étranger le traita-t-il? 19. Pourquoi un passant s'informa-t-il de leur différend? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. The verb <i>bégayer</i> is derived from it. 4. It means <i>stammering</i> in English. 6. He met a man who stuttered also. 8. He came across him on his arrival in a town. 10. He wished to know where he came from. 12. He could not readily explain himself. 14. He answered him as well as he could. 16. He thought that they were making fun of him. 18. He set to abusing him. 20. Because he could not bear their quarrelling any longer. |
|---|--|

160.

[To be translated and learnt by heart.]

Un homme qui se piquait d'être économe, apprit qu'un de ses voisins l'était plus que lui ; il voulut s'en convaincre. Mon cher voisin, lui dit-il un soir en entrant chez lui, j'ai entendu dire que personne n'était meilleur économe que vous ; et comme je me fais gloire de l'être un peu moi-même, je voudrais m'entretenir avec vous sur les divers moyens que vous employez. Si c'est là le motif qui vous amène chez moi, lui répondit l'avare, donnez-vous la peine de vous asseoir, et nous en parlerons.

161.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Do you remember having heard this story? 2. What did that man take pride in? 3. He took a pride in not being a spendthrift. 4. What was he told one day? [A. v.] 5. They told him that there was a man in the neighbourhood who was more economical than he <i>was</i>. 6. How did he become convinced of it? 7. He called upon him for that purpose. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8. He told him that <i>he</i> himself took pride in being a great saver. 9. Why did he wish to converse with him? 10. Because he wished to ascertain the different means he made use of. 11. What did the miser reply to him? 12. He begged of him to sit down. 13. I thought that misers never required more than one chair. 14. This miser kept standing while they were chatting. |
|--|--|

162.

[Learn by heart and translate.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. De quoi cet homme-là se piquait-il? 3. Qu'apprit-il un jour d'un de ses voisins? 5. Pourquoi voulut-ils s'en convaincre? 7. Où donc se rendit-il un soir? 9. Qu'avait-il entendu dire? 11. De quoi se fit-il gloire? 13. Pourquoi voulut-il s'entretenir avec lui? 15. L'avare le reçut-il bien? 17. Lui demanda-t-il le motif de sa visite? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. He took pride in saving up his money. 4. That he was not the only miser in the town. 6. He believed only what he saw himself. 8. He called upon him for the purpose of paying him a visit. 10. That he could give him a lesson in economy. 12. Of not having squandered his property. 14. He wanted to learn how to become more economical. 16. He offered him an old broken chair on which he sat. 18. The story says nothing about it. |
|---|---|

163.

[Commit to memory and translate.]

[Suite.] En même temps, il éteignit sa chandelle, et dit : Nous n'avons pas besoin de lumière pour parler ; nous en serons moins distraits.—Ah ! cette leçon me suffit, s'écria l'autre ; je m'aperçois que je ne suis qu'un élève auprès de vous ; et il se retira en tâtonnant. Néanmoins, celui-ci était si ménager, que, pour épargner son encre, il ne mettait pas de points sur les *i*, lorsqu'il écrivait.

La plupart des avares sont de trop bonnes gens ; ils ne cessent d'amasser des biens pour ceux qui souhaitent leur mort.

164.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. What did he do at the same time ? | 11. He was in the habit of omitting all accents and stops. |
| 2. He at once put his candle out. | 12. Why are misers to be blamed ? |
| 3. Why did he extinguish the light ? | 13. Because others eventually enjoy their property. |
| 4. He was afraid that it might interfere with their conversation. | 14. By whom are they generally most admired ? [A. V.] |
| 5. Did this lesson suffice the visitor ? | 15. By those who long for their death. |
| 6. He exclaimed that he was beaten. | 16. Why is the adjective <i>bonnes</i> in feminine ? |
| 7. He said that he was but a novice compared to him. | 17. When is the adjective qualifying <i>gens</i> to be written in masculine ? |
| 8. How did he find his way out ? | |
| 9. He went out [in] feeling his way. | |
| 10. What did one of them do, in order to save his ink while writing ? | |

165.

[Learn by heart and translate.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. L'avare se servit-il de mouchettes ? | 2. He used his fingers. |
| 3. Depuis quand ne s'en sert-on plus ? | 4. Since the introduction of wax candles. |
| 5. Le mot <i>bougie</i> n'est-il pas historique ? | 6. It is derived from the name of a town in Africa, whence France received all her wax. |
| 7. Pourquoi éteignit-il sa chandelle ? | 8. Because they did not want it. |
| 9. Quelle crainte l'avare eut-il ? | 10. He was afraid lest the light might disturb them. |
| 11. Cette leçon lui suffit-elle ? | 12. He did not in the least expect it. |
| 13. Pourquoi se retira-t-il à tâtons ? | 14. Because they were both in the dark. |
| 15. Comment l'avare économisa-t-il son encre ? | 16. He hardly ever wrote except with a lead pencil. |
| 17. Pour qui les avares amassent-ils ? | 18. For those who come after them. |

166.

[Translate and learn by heart.]

Un jeune homme, nommé Péloni, avait perdu son père et sa mère, lorsqu'il n'avait que six ans. Comme il était toujours fort maltraité par son oncle, il résolut de s'échapper de la maison, pour voir le monde. Il arriva à la cour d'un certain prince, auquel il eut le bonheur de plaire, et qui le prit à son service, en lui promettant de le faire parvenir, avec le temps, aux honneurs de sa cour, s'il faisait bien son devoir, et de le faire pendre, s'il y manquait. Mais, comme il eut le malheur de déplaire à la princesse, on le chassa du palais au bout de quinze jours.

167.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. How old was he when he lost his parents? 2. He was not quite six years old. 3. By whom was he adopted? 4. Did his uncle ever ill-treat him? 5. I should think so; he used to beat him for the least offence. 6. Did he not run away from his uncle's house? 7. He decided to leave his native town. 8. Why did he take such a step? 9. Because he wished to travel about. 10. Where did he at last arrive? 11. Did he please the prince? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 12. Why did he take him into his service? 13. What was promised to him? [A.V.] 14. They promised to make him succeed. 15. On what conditions did they promise to him that he would succeed? 16. What did the prince threaten to do to him? 17. Why was he driven out of the palace? 18. Because he had displeased the princess. |
|---|---|

168.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Comment s'appelait ce jeune homme? 3. Depuis quand était-il orphelin? 5. Pourquoi son oncle le maltraitait-il? 7. Que résolut-il de faire enfin? 9. Pourquoi ne se pendit-il pas? 11. A qui eut-il le bonheur de plaire? 13. A quelles conditions lui promit-on de le faire parvenir? 15. De quoi le menaçait-on s'il venait à négliger ses devoirs? 17. La princesse y tenait-elle beaucoup? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. I forget his name now. 4. Ever since he was six years old. 6. Because he disliked other people's children. 8. He made up his mind to hang himself. 10. He preferred travelling about. 12. A prince who engaged him. 14. On condition that he should behave well and do his duty. 16. To have him hanged on one of the highest trees in the forest. 18. She sent him about his business at the end of a week. |
|--|---|

169.

[Learn by heart after having translated it.]

[Suite.] Dans cette extrémité, il se décida à aller trouver un ami, qui demeurait à cinquante lieues de là. Mais, hélas ! y étant arrivé, il apprit que son ancien camarade était mort. Étant sans argent, sans connaissances, il ne savait quel parti prendre ; et, pour surcroît de malheur, il tomba malade. Sa situation devint embarrassante : il ne pouvait faire venir ni médecin, ni apothicaire, et néanmoins il guérit au bout de quelques jours. Ce fut alors qu'il partit pour l'Amérique, où demeurait son cousin, qui était un négociant fort riche.

170.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Where did he decide to go to ? | 10. He had neither money nor friends. |
| 2. He decided on calling upon a friend of his. | 11. And, to make matters worse, he was seized with fever and became ill. |
| 3. Did his friend live far from his house ? | 12. Were there no doctors in the place ? |
| 4. He lived about 50 leagues away from him. | 13. There were doctors in abundance ; he, however, got better without their aid. |
| 5. How many English miles is that ? | 14. Why did he start for America ? |
| 6. It is about 150 miles. | 15. He had an object in doing so. |
| 7. What did he learn on his arrival ? | 16. What did his cousin do in America ? |
| 8. They told him, that his former companion had been dead for upwards of six months. | 17. He was a wealthy trader. |
| 9. Had the traveller much money about him ? | |

171.

[Learn by heart and turn into French.]

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Que fit le voyageur dans cette extrémité ? | 2. He did not know what to do. |
| 3. Quel parti se proposa-t-il de prendre ? | 4. He determined to call upon an old school-fellow. |
| 5. À quelle distance de là, son ami demeura-t-il ? | 6. He lived at a distance greater than he expected. |
| 7. Quand apprit-il que son ami était mort ? | 8. They told him when he arrived. |
| 9. Avait-il des moyens d'existence ? | 10. He had never had any [of them]. |
| 11. Que lui arriva-t-il plus tard ? | 12. He was seized with sudden illness. |
| 13. Il va sans dire qu'il ordonna qu'on fit venir le médecin ? | 14. He did nothing of the kind, because he had no means wherewith to pay the fees. |
| 15. Comment se fit-il qu'il guérit sitôt ? | 16. He had an iron constitution. |
| 17. Dans quel but partit-il pour l'Amérique ? | 18. With the object of making his fortune. |

172.

[Learn by heart and construe.]

[Suite.] Lorsqu'il fut en pleine mer, il survint une furieuse tempête : la foudre tomba sur le vaisseau et le mit en feu. L'équipage se jeta à la mer, pour se sauver à la nage. Péloni en fit autant, et gagna heureusement le rivage, fermement résolu de s'en retourner dans sa ville natale. Mais, hélas ! elle n'était plus ; un tremblement de terre l'avait engloutie. Il ne savait que faire ; tout désolé, il se fit enrôler. On le mena au régiment : on le fait tourner à droite et à gauche, coucher en joue, tirer, et on lui donne trente coups de bâton. Dégouté des exercices militaires, il déserta. Il n'eut pas fait deux lieues, que voilà quatre dragons bulgares qui l'atteignent, qui le lient, et qui le mènent dans un cachot.

173.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. What happened when he was on the main sea? | 10. He could not believe that an earthquake had destroyed his native town. |
| 2. A fearful hurricane arose. | 11. What treatment was he made [A. v.] to undergo after he had enlisted? |
| 3. How was it that he could get on board ship without having any money? | 12. Tell me why he at last deserted? |
| 4. He went as a sailor. | 13. How far had he gone before he was arrested? [A. v.] |
| 5. What became of the crew? | 14. He was caught by a squad of dragoons and taken to prison. |
| 6. How did they escape? | 15. How many miles had he travelled when he was caught? |
| 7. Did he succeed in reaching the shore? | |
| 8. He was an excellent swimmer. | |
| 9. Did not he make up his mind to return to his native country? | |

174.

[Learn by heart and translate.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Comment parvint-il à se rendre dans une contrée si lointaine? | 2. He was tired of the mishaps he had experienced in Europe, and became a sailor. |
| 3. Quel incident faillit lui faire perdre cette vie, à laquelle il tenait tant? | 4. He was nearly drowned with the crew, after the ship was wrecked. |
| 5. Comment gagna-t-il le rivage? | 6. He reached it by swimming. |
| 7. Que découvrit-il en arrivant au lieu où jadis était sa ville natale? | 8. He found that it had ceased to exist; an earthquake had destroyed it. |
| 9. Quel parti prit-il dans son désespoir? | 10. Being disgusted with life, he enlisted. |
| 11. Quelle punition lui fit-on subir? | 12. They beat him with sticks, to cheer him up. |
| 13. Pour quel motif résolut-il de désertéer? | 14. Because he hated military life. |

175.

[Construct and learn by heart.]

[Suite.] On lui demanda ce qu'il aimait le mieux, d'être fustigé trente-six fois par tout le régiment, ou de recevoir à la fois douze balles de plomb dans la cervelle. Il ne voulait ni l'un ni l'autre ; mais, il fallut faire un choix, et il se détermina à passer trente-six fois par les baguettes. Le régiment était composé de deux mille hommes ; il essaya deux promenades, et comme on allait procéder à la troisième course, Péloni, n'en pouvant plus, demanda en grâce qu'on voulût bien avoir la bonté de lui casser la tête. Il obtint cette faveur ; on lui bande les yeux, on le fait mettre à genoux. Le prince passe dans ce moment, et lui accorde sa grâce. Quelques jours après on livra bataille.

176.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. How did they punish deserters? 2. They were permitted [A.V.] to choose the punishment about to be inflicted [A.V.] on them. 3. What punishment did he prefer? 4. He preferred to be flogged [S.M.] 5. What alternative had he? 6. That of having his brains blown out. 7. Did he care much for either of them? 8. Of how many men was his regiment composed? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. How many strokes could he endure? 10. He soon grew tired of it. 11. What did he do, when he was well nigh exhausted? 12. He asked, as a favour, that he might be shot at once. 13. Did they comply with his request? 14. He refused to have his eyes bandaged [S.M.] and to kneel down. 15. Was it not fortunate for him that the prince arrived? |
|--|--|

177.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Quelle punition auriez-vous préférée? 3. Combien de fois fallait-il qu'il fût fustigé? 5. Quant à moi, je n'aurais pas déserté. 7. Pourquoi lui fallut-il faire un choix? 9. Quelle était la longueur des baguettes? 11. Qu'arriva-t-il après la deuxième course? 13. Quelle prière adressa-t-il à ses bourreaux? 15. N'obtint-il pas cette faveur? 17. Pourquoi lui dit-on de se mettre à genoux? 19. Qu'arriva-t-il quand le prince passa? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. I should have preferred neither. 4. He had to be flogged thirty-six times by the whole regiment. 6. It is probable that he did not think of that. 8. The men refused to be kept waiting. 10. They were longer than he thought. 12. He was exhausted and fell down. 14. He entreated them to shoot him on the spot. 16. Yes ; they did not mind. 18. So as to be able to take a safer aim at him. 20. He objected to this man being shot. |
|--|--|

178.

[Construe and learn by heart.]

[Fin.] Les deux armées étaient en présence l'une de l'autre, les tambours battaient le roulement, on sonnait de la trompette; les canons ronflaient et renversaient quelques milliers d'hommes de chaque côté; la mousqueterie et la baïonnette firent de grands ravages. Péloni passa par-dessus des tas de morts et de mourants. Les blessés criaient qu'on achevât de leur donner la mort. Des cervelles étaient répandues sur la terre, à côté des bras et des jambes coupés. Les Français remportèrent la victoire, et Péloni prisonnier, fut conduit en France, où il épousa une riche veuve.

179.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. How did the battle commence? | 8. Upwards of 4,000 men were killed. |
| 2. Both armies were in view of each other. | 9. Had our hero been killed by that time? |
| 3. By whom were they commanded? | 10. He had to pass over heaps of dying and wounded men. |
| 4. The drums began to beat, and the bugles were sounded. [A.V.] | 11. Did not many of them implore that their lives might be taken [from them]? |
| 5. The roar of the cannon was heard [A.V.], and many a man was slain. | 12. It was a hideous sight. |
| 6. Volleys of musket-firing were heard [A.V.], and the enemy charged [A.V.] with the bayonet. | 13. What was Péloni's fate? |
| 7. Were many ravages committed? [A.V.] | 14. He escaped death, and married an old widow. |

180.

[Learn by heart and translate.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. La bataille dura-t-elle longtemps? | 2. It lasted <i>for</i> upwards of fifteen hours. |
| 3. Combien y eut-il d'hommes de tués? | 4. They could not be counted [A.V.]. |
| 5. L'armée ennemie était-elle moins forte que celle des Français? | 6. The French army was considerably stronger and had better generals. |
| 7. Avez-vous jamais entendu une décharge de mousqueterie? | 8. I have often belonged to a firing-party. |
| 9. Où les baïonnettes furent-elles d'abord fabriquées? | 10. They were first manufactured in Bayonne, in the 16th century. |
| 11. Quel fut le sort des blessés? | 12. The greater part died on the battle-field. |
| 13. Que fit-on des prisonniers? | 14. They were sent to France, and were well cared for. |

181.

[Learn by heart and write out from memory.]

La guerre de Sept ans eut pour cause la jalousie de l'Autriche, qui voyait avec regret s'élever au nord de l'Allemagne, une puissance rivale de la sienne, et qui voulait reprendre la Silésie, dont la Prusse s'était emparée dès 1740. Cette guerre se divise en deux parties : 1^o la lutte du roi de Prusse, Frédéric II qui fut appuyé par l'Angleterre, contre l'Autriche, la Saxe, la France et la Russie ; 2^o la lutte de l'Angleterre contre la France, principalement sur mer et aux Indes.

182.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Why is this war called the Seven Years' War? 2. Because it began in 1756 and lasted until 1763. 3. What was the cause of this war? 4. Austria's jealousy of [against] Prussia. 5. Austria feared that Prussia might become a powerful rival. 6. How long had Silesia belonged to Prussia? 7. It had belonged to her for upwards of sixteen years when the war broke out. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8. How may this war be divided? [A.V.] 9. It may be divided into two periods. 10. Who was king of England at that time? 11. George II., who died in 1760. 12. Who reigned over France? 13. Louis XVIII., who was called <i>le Bien-Aimé</i>. 14. Whose son was he, and how long did he reign? 15. He was the great-grandson of Louis XIV., and reigned over France from 1715 to 1774. |
|---|--|

183.

[Learn by heart and translate.]

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. A qui l'Autriche voulut-elle reprendre la Silésie? 3. Pourquoi lui en envia-t-elle la possession? 5. Malgré son génie et d'étonnantes victoires, Frédéric ne fut-il jamais battu? 7. Par qui Elisabeth fut-elle remplacée sur le trône de Russie? 9. En quelle année mourut-elle? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. Austria wanted to take it from Prussia. 4. Because Austria was afraid of Prussia becoming too powerful. 6. He was often beaten, and owed his ultimate success to the death of Elizabeth, the Empress of Russia. 8. She was succeeded by Paul, who declared himself in favour of Prussia. 10. She died in 1762. |
|--|---|

184.

[Learn by heart and write out from memory.]

[Fin.] Les résultats de cette guerre, furent désastreux pour la France : elle perdit, avec sa marine, sa suprématie et la plupart de ses possessions aux Indes, ainsi que le Canada ; le roi de Prusse garda la Silésie, qu'on avait voulu lui ravir, et l'Espagne se vit obligée de céder aux Anglais la Floride et la baie de Pensacola.

Ainsi, le traité de Paris signé en 1763, mit fin à une guerre, à laquelle la Prusse doit d'être devenue puissance du premier ordre.

185.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. What were the results of this war ? 2. The King of Prussia retained possession of Silesia. 3. Who wished to take it from him ? 4. Maria Theresa, who perceived that the king was on bad terms with all the chief continental powers. 5. With whom did she contract an offensive and defensive alliance ? 6. With the Empress of Russia, the King of Poland, and Elector of Saxony, and Louis XV. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. What losses did France sustain ? 8. She lost Canada and a great number of Indian Colonies. 9. The British-Hanoverian-Hessian army was composed of 60,000 men ; and the Prussian army was 200,000 strong. 10. This desperate conflict increased tenfold the moral power of Prussia, and gave its army a prestige, which it retained till the battle of Jena. |
|--|---|

186.

Learn by heart.

1. À quelles circonstances la France doit-elle la perte de ses possessions aux Indes, ainsi que celle du Canada ?
3. Où la Silésie est-elle située ? Quant à moi, je l'ignore.
5. Comment cette province de l'ancien royaume de Prusse est-elle bornée ? Il est à regretter que cette carte ne puisse se dérouler.
7. Quand le traité de paix fut-il signé ?

Translate.

2. To the disastrous results of this war ; in addition, she lost her navy and much of her influence.
4. It lies south of the province of Brandenburg and Posen.
6. On the East by the Polish provinces of Russia and Austria, and on the South and West by the Austrian provinces of Silesia, Bohemia and Saxony.
8. On the 15th of February, 1763.

187.

[Learn by heart and write out from memory.]

On attribue l'invention des cartes à jouer à Jacquemin Gringonneur, peintre de la fin du XIV^e siècle. Après avoir amusé la démente de Charles VI, elles ne tardèrent pas à devenir une récréation à la mode. Sous Charles VII, les figures reçurent les différents noms qu'elles portent aujourd'hui. On prétend que *David* (roi de pique), tourmenté par un fils rebelle, est l'emblème de Charles VII, menacé par son fils Louis XI, et qu'*Argine* (reine de trèfle), anagramme de *Regina*, désigne Marie d'Anjou, femme de ce prince; que *Fallas* (dame de pique) représente la Pucelle d'Orléans; *Rachel* (dame de carreau), Agnès Sorel; enfin *Judith* (dame de cœur), la reine Isabeau de Bavière.

188.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. To whom may their invention be attributed? [A.V.] 2. Were not playing cards spoken of before the end of the 14th century? 3. An old French poet mentioned them in 1328. 4. By what monarch were they much appreciated? 5. In his mental aberration, Charles VI. used to amuse himself with them. 6. Were they long in becoming a fashionable amusement? 7. Who is represented by the King of Spades? 8. Who is the Queen of Clubs? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 9. Whom does the Queen of Spades represent? 10. What historical personages are symbolized by the Queen of Hearts and the Queen of Diamonds? 11. Who was Queen Isabella of Bavaria? 12. She was the wife of Charles VI. of France. 13. I am inclined to think that cards are of ancient and Eastern origin. The Royal Asiatic Society possesses a pack which is said to be more than 1,000 years old. |
|--|--|

189.

[Learn by heart and write out from memory.]

[Suite.] Les autres rois sont des personnages historiques; des quatre valets, *Ogier* et *Lancelot* étaient des preux de Charlemagne; *Hector de Gallard* et *La Hire* étaient des capitaines distingués sous Charles VII. Les quatre valets représentent la noblesse; toutes les autres cartes depuis les dix, désignent les soldats. Les couleurs même sont des emblèmes militaires: le *cœur* indique la bravoure; le *pique* et les *carreaux*, les armes; le *trèfle* le fourrage; l'*as*, monnaie romaine, est le symbole de la guerre.

190.

1. But pray, who are the other kings?
2. They are supposed to be historical personages.
3. Do not the four knaves represent the nobility?
4. The other cards represent the soldiers, and the *ace* is the sinews of war.
5. Paris and Nancy produce the greatest number of playing-cards.
6. Their annual consumption in France, amounts to two millions of francs.
7. How much is that in English money?
8. Divide 2,000,000 by 25, and you will know.
9. Of course 25 francs are equal to one pound sterling.
10. I found out that such is not always the case.
11. At the time of the French Revolution, the places of the card kings were filled by four philosophers—Molière, La Fontaine, Voltaire, and Rousseau.
12. And those of their queens by four virtues — Prudence, Justice, Temperance, and Fortitude.

191.

1. À qui prétend-on devoir l'invention des cartes à jouer?
2. A French painter of the 14th century is supposed [active] to have invented them.
3. Depuis quelle époque sont-elles devenues une récréation à la mode?
4. Ever since wise men have condescended to play with the toys of a fool.
5. Quand les anagrammes furent-elles le plus à la mode?
6. I cannot enter into that discussion just now; I have no time.
7. Qui était Marie d'Anjou?
8. She was the mother of Louis XI.
9. Comment mourut la Pucelle?
10. She was burnt alive at Rouen.
11. Isabeau de Bavière ne fut-elle pas adorée de ses sujets?
12. She was universally hated, and died in 1435.

192.

On appelle *anagramme*, la transposition des lettres d'un nom ou de plusieurs mots, de manière que ce nouvel arrangement forme un ou plusieurs autres mots. L'anagramme du mot *Versailles* est *ville seras*; celle du poète *Pierre de Ronsard*, *Rose de Pindare*; celle de *Marie Touchet*, *je charme tout*; de *vigneron*, *ivrogne*. On en attribue l'invention à Lycophron, poète grec qui florissait environ 280 ans avant Jésus-Christ. Elles furent en vogue à la cour de France au XVI^e siècle; mais le goût de ces laborieuses bagatelles a passé depuis longtemps.

193.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Can you now inform me of the period at which anagrams were most resorted to in France? 2. How are they made? [A.v.] 3. By means of the transposition of letters into names or other words? 4. Who is said to have invented them? 5. Lycophron, one of the poets, who flourished under Ptolemy Philadelphus. 6. He died by the wound of an arrow. 7. The titles of twenty of his tragedies have been preserved. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8. How many years was that before Christ? 9. Is the final <i>t</i> in <i>Jésus-Christ</i> to be pronounced? [A.v.] 10. It is not, but it is to be sounded [A.v.] in <i>Christ</i>. 11. Are anagrams still in fashion in France? 12. People no longer waste their time over them. 13. What anagram was found [A.v.] to exist in <i>Révolution française</i>? 14. A prediction which was fulfilled : <i>un Corse la finira</i>. |
|---|---|

194.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. A quelle époque et sous le règne de quel monarque Ronsard vécut-il? 3. Qui était Marie Touchet? 5. Quelle anagramme forma-t-on du nom de celui qui exécuta la première ascension aérostatique? 7. Par quelle anagramme, <i>Frère Jacques Clément</i>, fut-il flétri? 9. Comment se fait-il qu'on ne fasse plus de ces bagatelles? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. Charles IX. had a great affection for him, and loaded him with favours. 4. She was the mistress of Charles IX. 6. His name was Pilastre du Rosier, and they altered it into <i>Tu es le premier roi de l'air</i>; the <i>p</i> standing for <i>premier</i>. 8. They made of it <i>C'est l'enfer qui m'a créé</i>. It was he who murdered Henry IV., King of France. 10. People have something better to do, and they cannot be blamed for neglecting them [A.v.]. |
|--|--|

195.

Deux individus, grands faiseurs de calembours, dinaient ensemble, il y a quinze jours, chez un restaurateur du Palais-Royal. A la fin du repas, l'un d'eux dit à l'autre : " Je te parie que je fais un calembour sur le premier mot que tu diras, en sortant de table. — Je parie que non. — Je parie que si. — Le prix du dîner? — Va, pour le dîner." Le calembouriste attend de pied ferme. L'autre cherche le mot le plus difficile, et, enfin, s'approchant de la fenêtre, il dit : " Il pleut. — Eh bien, *chicot*. — Ah ! dit-il, j'ai perdu ; il pleut, reste dedans."

196.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Where had these witty fellows been dining? 2. They usually dined together every fortnight at the Palais-Royal. 3. Why is it called the Palais-Royal? 4. It was originally built for Cardinal Richelieu, and was therefore called Palais-Cardinal. 5. After his death, it was inhabited by Anne of Austria and her two sons, Louis XIV. and Philippe d'Orléans. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 6. Since then it received the name of Palais-Royal. 7. What is the meaning of <i>chicot</i>? 8. It means the stump of an old tooth, which is <i>un reste de dent</i>, and no difference exists between the pronunciation of these words and <i>reste dedans</i>, "keep indoors." 9. Of course he lost his wager? 10. He made no more puns on that day. |
|---|--|

197.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Comment saurait-on définir le calembour? 3. Le jardin du Palais-Royal fut-il toujours entouré par une ligne de maisons? 5. Que se passa-t-il au Palais-Royal la veille de la Prise de la Bastille? 7. N'a-t-il pas aussi porté les noms de Palais-Egalité, Palais du Tribunat, et Palais-National? 9. Par quel son nom primitif lui fut-il restitué? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. As the wit of those who have never had any. 4. It was done by Philippe-Egalité, who had them let out to tradesmen. 6. Camille Desmoulins there called the people to arms. 8. Yes; in 1789, 1801, and 1850. It has often been designated by the name of the Capital of Paris. 10. By the late Emperor Napoleon III. |
|---|---|

198.

Pendant plusieurs siècles, en France, les particuliers ne correspondaient entre eux que par l'entremise des messagers, que l'Université de Paris expédiait, à des époques indéterminées et à son profit, dans les principales villes du royaume. Plus tard, le service de la *Poste aux lettres*, devint une annexe de celui de la poste aux chevaux. Il ne fut organisé comme service distinct qu'en 1627, époque à laquelle fut établi un tarif pour le port des lettres. A partir de 1663, les postes furent affermées; en 1791, l'état se chargea lui-même de l'exploitation. Le secret des lettres étant un des premiers besoins de la société, la loi a voulu le garantir par des mesures sévères.

199.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. How did private individuals correspond in olden times? 2. By means of messengers. 3. By whom were these messengers paid? 4. They were employed by the University. 5. Who was the founder of the University of Paris? 6. It was founded in 1200 by Philip Augustus; and its statutes were drawn up by Robert de Courson, an Englishman. | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 7. How long is it since a definite tariff was settled for the delivery of letters? 8. Is it a fact that ever since 1663 the delivery of letters in France was let or farmed out to speculators? 9. Since when has the State had the working of the Post Office in France? 10. Have not the authorities the right of opening letters during their transmission in France? |
|--|---|

200.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. À qui attribue-t-on l'invention des postes? 3. Mais qui est réellement le premier qui ait employé des relais analogues à ceux d'aujourd'hui? 5. Quand le corps de courriers institué par Charlemagne, disparut-il? 7. À quel monarque doit-on l'organisation des postes en France? 9. Qu'entend-on par <i>maîtres courriers</i>? 11. Que requèrent-ils des rois de France? | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. It is attributed to Cyrus, King of Persia. 4. The Emperor Augustus introduced them, for the purpose of accelerating the rapidity of communication. 6. They were called <i>cursores</i> or <i>veredarii</i>, and they disappeared shortly after his death. 8. Louis XI. organized them by the Edict of Dourlens, which was promulgated in 1464. 10. They were the same as the postmasters. 12. Numerous privileges, which were abolished in 1790. |
|--|--|

VOCABULARY.

NOTE.—The subjoined 1670 words, together with the *Irregular Verbs*, given on pp. 38—51, and the 845 definitions of *English Infinitives and Particles*, to be found on pp. 57—77 and 86—88, will amply suffice for the writing out of the greater part of the Exercises.

A Dictionary will have to be consulted by the Senior Classes, when the more difficult Exercises are taken up.

Reflexive Verbs and Verbs preceded by an (*) take *être* in their Compound Tenses.

A

A [*music*], la. m.
 abroad, à l'étranger.
 absence, absence, f.
 absent, absent.
 abstain, s'abstenir de.
 absurd, absurde.
 accept, to, accepter.
 accident, accident, m.
 accompany, to, accompagner.
 account, compte, m.
 accuse, to, accuser.
 accustom, to, accoutumer.
 accustom o. s., accustomed, to get, s'accoutumer.
 acknowledge, reconnaître.
 act, to, agir.
 actor, acteur, m., actrice, f.
 acme, le plus haut degré.
 acquaint, to, faire savoir à, annoncer.
 acquaintance, connaissance, f.
 acquire, acquérir.
 act, to, agir, se conduire.
 add, ajouter.
 addicted, to be, s'adonner à.
 address, adresse, f.
 address, to, adresser.
 address o. s., to } s'adresser.
 — to o. s., }
 admire, to, admirer.
 admit, to, admettre.
 advantage, avantage, m.
 advice, conseil, avis, m.
 advise, to, conseiller à.
 advocate, être en faveur de.
 affable, affable.
 afford, to, donner, faire.
 afraid, to be, avoir peur.
 after, après.
 afternoon, après-midi, f.
 again, encore, de nouveau.
 against, contre.
 age, âge, siècle, m.
 ago, 7 years, il y a 7 ans.
 agree (*impers.*), s'en trouver bien.

agree about, to, *convenir de.
 agriculture, agriculture, f.
 aim at, to, viser à.
 algebra, algèbre, m.
 all, tout, toute, tous, toutes.
 allow, to, permettre, souffrir.
 almost, presque.
 alone, seul.
 aloud, à haute voix.
 already, déjà.
 alter one's mind, to, changer d'avis.
 always, toujours.
 a.m., du matin.
 amendment, amendement, m.
 amiable, aimable.
 amicably, à l'amiable.
 among, parmi.
 amount, montant, m.
 analyze, to, analyser.
 angry, fâché.
 annexed, ci-joint.
 answer, réponse, f.
 answer, to, répondre à.
 anticipate, prévenir.
 anxious, désireux, impatient.
 anybody (*int.*), quelqu'un.
 — (*neg.*), ne-personne.
 any one (*int.*), quelqu'un.
 — (*neg.*), ne-personne.
 anything (*int.*), quelque chose
 — (*affir.*), rien.
 — (*neg.*), ne-rien.
 apartment, appartement, m.
 appear, paraître.
 — (*judic.*), comparaître.
 apple, pomme, f.
 apply o. s., to, s'appliquer à.
 — to, s'adresser à.
 — for, to, faire la demande de, demander.
 appropriate to o. s., to, s'approprier.
 approval, approbation, f.
 approve, to, approuver.
 arithmetic, arithmétique, f.
 arrest, to, arrêter.
 arrive, to, *arriver.

arm, bras, m.
 arms, with open, à bras ouverts, m.
 army, armée, f.
 ask, to, demander.
 —, a question, faire.
 — of o. s., to, se demander.
 aspire, to, aspirer.
 assail, to, assaillir.
 assemble, to, s'assembler.
 assiduous, assidu.
 assist, to, aider.
 as soon as, aussitôt que.
 assure, to, assurer.
 atheist, athée, m.
 at last, enfin.
 at once, tout de suite.
 attached, to be, s'attacher à.
 attend to, to, s'occuper de.
 — at, to, assister.
 attention, attention, f.
 attentive, attentif.
 audience, auditoire, m.
 aunt, tante, f.
 Australia, Australie, f.
 Austria, Autriche, f.
 author, auteur, m. & f.
 authority, autorité, f.
 avail o. s., to, profiter de.
 avoid, to, éviter.
 award, to, décerner.

B

B [*music*] β, m.
 bad, mauvais.
 bachelor, célibataire, m.
 badly, mal.
 bake, to, (faire) cuire.
 ball, party, bal, m.
 bargain, marché, m.
 barrister, avocat, m.
 bathe, to, se baigner.
 battalion, bataillon, m.
 battle, bataille, f. [m.
 battle-field, champ de bataille,
 be, to, être.

be in health, to, se porter.
 — able, pouvoir.
 — longing, avoir bien envie, désirer vivement.
 beard, barbe, f.
 beat, to, battre.
 beautiful, beau, bel, belle.
 beauty, beauté, f.
 because, parce que.
 become, to, *devenir.
 bed, lit, m.
 bee, abeille, f.
 before *(time)*, avant.
 — *(place)*, devant.
 — *(some time ago)*, au-
 paravant.
 befriending, to, favoriser.
 beggar, mendiant, m.
 behave, to, se conduire.
 Belgium, Belgique, f.
 believe, croire.
 belong, appartenir.
 beseech, to, supplier.
 best *(adj.)*, le meilleur.
 — *(adv.)*, le mieux.
 betake o. s., to, se rendre.
 betray, to, trahir.
 better *(adj.)*, meilleur.
 — *(adv.)*, mieux.
 between, entre.
 beware of, to, se défier de.
 bill, mémoire, compte, m.
 — *(parlem.)*, projet de loi,
 bill, m.
 bird, oiseau, m.
 bitterly, amèrement.
 blame, to, blâmer.
 Blanche, Blanche.
 blood, sang, m.
 blush at, to, rougir de.
 board, on, à bord.
 boarder, pensionnaire, m.
 boat, bateau, m.
 — steam, — à vapeur, m.
 body, assemblée, f., corps, m.
 boil, to, (faire) bouillir.
 boldness, hardiesse, f.
 bonnet, chapeau, m.
 —, duck of a, gentil bibi, m.
 book, livre, m.
 boot, men's, botte, bottine, f.
 —, ladies' and children's,
 bottine, f.
 born, to be, *naître.
 both, l'un et l'autre.
 bottle, bouteille, f.
 boy, garçon, m.
 — *(pupil)*, élève, m.
 — *(son)*, fils, m.
 bread, pain, m.
 break itself, to, briser, se
 casser.
 breakfast, déjeuner, m.
 break up, to, enfoncer, rompre.
 bribe, to, corrompre.
 bring *(things)*, to, apporter.
 — *(persons)*, to, amener.

bring to—senses, ramener ...
 à la raison, faire entendre
 raison.
 brother, frère, m.
 — in-law, beau-frère, m.
 build, *(nav.)*, to, construire.
 business, commerce, m.
 but, mais.
 — only, ne-que.
 butler, maître d'hôtel, m.
 buy, to, acheter.

C.

C *(music)*, do, ut, m.
 call on *(visit)*, to, passer chez.
 call, to, appeler.
 can, to, pouvoir.
 cards, cartes, f. p.
 care, soin, m.
 care for, to, tenir à.
 careful, soigneux.
 — to be, prendre garde.
 carpet-bag, sac de nuit, m.
 carriage, voiture, f.
 carry, to, porter.
 — away, to, emporter.
 case *(event)*, cas, m.
 —, such is the, il en est
 ainsi.
 cat, chat, m., chatte, f.
 catch cold, to, s'enrhumer.
 cause *(motive)*, motif, m.
 cease, to, cesser, mettre fin à.
 Charles, Charles.
 cheat, to, tricher.
 cheerful, joyeux.
 chess, échecs, m. p.
 —, play at, to, jouer aux
 échecs.
 chicken, poulet, m.
 child, enfant, m. & f.
 church, église, f.
 civil man, homme honnête.
 —, poli.
 civility, politesse, f.
 class, classe, f.
 clean, to, nettoyer.
 clear, clair.
 clear the table, desservir.
 clever, habile.
 closely, de près.
 coat, habit, m.
 coffee, café, m.
 coins, pl., monnaie, f.
 cold, it is, froid (il fait), m.
 coldly, froidement.
 collate, pourvoir à.
 collect, recueillir, ramasser.
 colonist, colon, m.
 colour, couleur, f.
 combatant, combattant, m.
 come to, *venir.
 — away from, to, *venir de.
 — down, to, *s'écrouler.
 — in, to, *entrer.

come to terms, to, s'entendre.
 committee, standing, comité
 permanent, m.
 commit suicide, to, se suicider.
 companion, compagnon, m.;
 compagne, f.
 compel, to, forcer.
 complain, to, se plaindre.
 compliment, compliment, m.
 composition, composition, f.
 conceal, to, taire, cacher.
 concede, to, admettre.
 concern, to, regarder.
 concert, concert, m.
 conclude, to, conclure.
 conduct, conduite, f.
 conduct, to, conduire.
 congratulate, féliciter.
 confer, to, conférer.
 congratulate, to, féliciter de.
 conquer, to, vaincre.
 conscientiously, conscien-
 cieusement.
 consecrate, to, bénir.
 consent, consentement, m.
 consent, to, consentir.
 consequently, par conséquent.
 consider, to, songer à.
 considerably, bien.
 considering, vu.
 Constance, Constance.
 construct, to, construire.
 consult, to, consulter.
 contingent, contingent, m.
 contradict, to, contredire.
 contrary, contraire, m.
 contribute, to, contribuer.
 converse, about to, s'entre-
 tenir de.
 convince, to, convaincre.
 copy, to, transcrire, copier.
 corn, blé, m.
 cornet, cornet-à-pistons, m.
 correct, to, corriger.
 corrupt, to, corrompre.
 correspondence, correspon-
 dance, f.
 cost, to, coûter.
 cottage, chaumière, f.
 country *(fields)*, campagne, f.
 — *(land)*, pays, m.
 — *(native)*, patrie, f.
 — *(provinces)*, province, f.
 county, comté, m.
 course, *(racing)*, carrière, f.
 course *(time)*, courant, m.
 court *(jud.)*, audience, f.
 — in, devant le tribunal, m.
 cousin, cousin, m.
 cover with, to, couvrir de.
 cowardice, lâcheté, f.
 creep, to, glisser.
 cross, de mauvaise humeur,
 fâché.
 cruelly, cruellement.
 cultivate, to, cultiver.
 cupboard, armoire, f.

curb, to, dompter.
 curse, maudire.
 custom, coutume, f.
 customer, pratique, f.

D.

D (*music*), ré, m.
 dancing, danse, f.
 danger, danger, m.
 dangerous, dangereux.
 dare, to, oser.
 day, jour, m.
 — after to-morrow, après-demain.
 — before yesterday, avant-hier.
 —, every, tous les jours.
 —, in a few, (*to come*) dans peu de jours.
 —, in the space of a few, (*at any time*) en peu de jours.
 —, whole, journée, f.
 daybreak, point du jour, m.
 deal, quantité, f.
 —, a great, beaucoup.
 dear, cher.
 decanter, carafe, f.
 deceive, to, tromper.
 decision, décision, f.
 declare, to, déclarer.
 dedicate, to, dédier.
 deduct, to, déduire.
 defend, to, défendre.
 deficiency, imperfection, f.
 define, to, définir.
 definition, définition, f.
 delighted, enchanté.
 delightful, charmant, délicieux.
 deliver, to, remettre, faire, [messages].
 — (*a judgment*), to, condamner.
 demonstrate, to, démontrer.
 deny, to, disconvenir de, nier.
 deposit, to, verser.
 deprive, to, priver.
 derive from, tirer de, retirer de, il résulte (*impers.*).
 describe, to, dépeindre, décrire.
 deserve, to, mériter.
 desire, désir, m.
 despise, to, mépriser.
 destine, to, destiner.
 destiny, destin, m.
 destroy, to, détruire.
 devil, diable, m.
 devote, to, consacrer.
 dictate, to, dicter.
 dictation, dictée, f.
 dictionary, dictionnaire, m.
 die, to, mourir.
 diet, régime, m.

difference (*contention*), différend, m.
 difficulty, difficulté, f.
 dining-room, salle à manger, f.
 dinner, dîner, m.
 disagreeable, désagréable.
 disappear, to, disparaître.
 disappointment, désappointement, m.
 discipline, discipline, f.
 discourse, to, discourir.
 discover, to, découvrir, trouver.
 discussion, discussion, f.
 disengaged, to be, être libre.
 dishonesty, improbité, f.
 dismiss, to, destituer.
 disobey, to, désobéir à.
 disperse, to, disperser.
 dispense, to, déplaier à.
 displeasure, déplaisir, m.
 dissatisfied with, mécontent de.
 dissuade, to, dissuader de.
 distinguish o. s., to, se distinguer.
 distress, affliction, f.
 disturb, to, déranger.
 dive, to, plonger.
 divide among (*between*), se partager.
 divulge, to, révéler.
 do, to, faire.
 — a kindness, to, rendre service.
 document, document, m.
 doctor, médecin, m.
 dog, chien, m.
 doubt, to, douter de.
 draw (*art*), to, dessiner.
 drawing, dessin, m.
 drawing-room, salon, m.
 dreary, horrible.
 dress (*manner of*), habillement, m.
 —, robe, f.
 —, to, s'habiller, se vêtir.
 drilling, exercice militaire, m.
 drink, to, boire.
 drive (*a horse*), to, conduire.
 due, dû, m., due, f.
 dull, lourd, borné.
 Dunkirk, Dunkerque, m.
 duplicity, duplicité, f.
 dusk, at, à, sur la brune.
 duty, devoir, m.

E.

E (*music*), mi, m.
 each other, l'un l'autre, les uns les autres.
 —, to, l'un à l'autre, les uns aux autres.
 earlier, de meilleure heure, plus tôt.

early, de bonne heure.
 earn, gagner.
 easily, facilement.
 eat, manger.
 eclipse, éclipse, f.
 economize, to, économiser.
 Edgar, Édgar.
 Edith, Edith.
 edition, édition, f.
 effort, effort, m.
 Egypt, Égypte, f.
 eldest, aîné.
 elect, to, élire.
 eleven, half-past, 11 heures et demie.
 eloquence, éloquence, f.
 Eltham, Eltham, m.
 embark, s'embarquer.
 enclose, ajouter, renfermer.
 encourage in, encourager à.
 end (*butt*), bout, m.
 endeavour, effort, m.
 enemy, ennemi, m.
 England, Angleterre, f.
 English (*s.*), anglais, m.
 English (*adj.*), anglais.
 English History, histoire d'Angleterre, f.
 enjoy o. s., to, s'amuser.
 enough, assez (*precedes the adj. & adv.*).
 enter, *entrer dans. [m.
 entrenchment, retranchement,
 entrust, confier à.
 envious, envieux.
 erect, to, ériger.
 ere now, auparavant.
 error, erreur, f.
 espouse, to, épouser.
 evacuate, évacuer.
 evening, soir, m.
 —, (*in the*), le soir.
 —, (*whole*), soirée, f.
 event, événement, m.
 ever, jamais.
 —, for, à jamais, toujours.
 everybody, tout le monde, m.
 everything, tout.
 example, exemple, m.
 excellent, excellent.
 exercise, exercice, m.
 exclude, exclure.
 excursion, partie de plaisir, f.
 excuse, excuse, f.
 exhort, exhorter à.
 experience in, to, éprouver.
 expect, to, attendre.
 experiment, essai, m.; expérience, f.
 — (*chemical*), expérience de chimie, f.
 explain, expliquer.
 — o. s., s'—.
 explanation, explication, f.
 expose, to, exposer.
 express, to, exprimer.
 expression, expression, f.

extraordinary, extraordinaire.
extreme, in the, au plus haut
degré.

F.

F (female), fa, m.
fail, échouer.
fasting, jeûnant, m.
fain, to be, désirer.
fair, juste.
faith, foi, f.
fall asleep, s'endormir.
falsehood, mensonge, m.
family, famille, f.
— circle, famille, f.
fancy, to, s'imaginer.
fast, vite.
fasten, to, fermer.
father, père, m.
fault, défaut, m.
favour, grâce, faveur, f.
favourably, favorablement.
favourite, favori, m.
fear, to, craindre.
—, just, crainte, f.
feel (phys.), to, sentir.
— (emot.), to, ressentir. [m.
fellow (good part), gaillard.
— (bad part), individu, m.
fertile, fertile.
fertility, fertilité, f.
fetch, to, allercher.
— go and, aller quérir.
few, a (adj.), quelques.
— (pron.), quelques-uns.
—, very, très peu de.
fickle, inconstant.
fight for, to, combattre pour.
— (with), to, lutter.
fill with, to, remplir de.
find, to, trouver.
finish (end), to, finir.
— (completeness), to, achever.
fire, feu, m.
—, to, faire feu.
first, premier.
—, at, d'abord.
— of all, d'abord.
fish, poisson, m. p.
flag, drapeau, m.
fat, gras, m.
fanny, farol, m.
flatter, to, flatter.
flattering, flatteur, —, —.
flee, s'enfuir.
fleet, rapide, f.
flourish, to, prospérer.
flower, fleur, f.
— bed, parterre, m.
flute, flûte, f.
fog, brouillard, m.
follow, suivre.
forbid, défendre.
force, force, f.
forces, forces, f. p.
foreign, étranger.

foremost, le premier.
foresee, prévoir.
forget, oublier.
forgive, to, pardonner à.
form, to, former.
fort, fort, m.
forthwith, sur-le-champ.
fortnight, quinzaine, f. :
quinze jours.
fortune, fortune, f.
forward, expédier.
fowl, poule, f.
frame, cadre, m.
France, France, f.
French (s.), Français, m.
French (adj.), français.
frequent, fréquent.
Friday, vendredi, m.
friend, ami, m. ; amie, f.
friends (relations) famille, f. s.
friendship, amitié, f.
frost, gelée, f.
fruit, fruit, m.
fry, (faire) frire.
fulfil, to, remplir. [m.
furniture (effects), mobilier,
—, (a piece of) meuble, m.
future, in, à l'avenir.

G.

G (music), sol, m.
gain, to, gagner, remporter.
game, partie, f.
gamble, to, jouer.
gardener, jardinier, m.
gather, to, cueillir, recueillir.
general, général, m.
generous, généreux.
gentleman, monsieur, m.
gentlemen, messieurs, p.
gentlemanly, gentil, bien
—, —.
geography, géographie, f.
geometry, géométrie, f.
German, (s.), Allemand, m.
— (adj.), allemand.
Germany, Allemagne, f.
Gertrude, Gertrude.
get, to, obtenir.
— up, to, se lever.
— accustomed, to, s'accou-
—, —.
— over, se consoler de.
giddy, étourdi.
gipsy, bohémien, m.
girl, fille, f.
give, donner.
— back, rendre.
— to e. o., se rendre.
— o. s. up, to, s'adresser à,
—, —.
— up, s'adresser.
glad, content.
—, very, bien aise.

go, aller.
— away, s'en aller, partir.
— off, se parer.
— out, sortir.
— to bed, to, se coucher.
god-daughter, filleule, f.
— father, parrain, m.
— mother, marraine, f.
— son, filleul, m.
good, bon, sage.
gooseberries, groseilles à
—, —.
maquereau, f. p.
grammar, grammaire, f.
grandfather, grand-père, m.
— daughter, petite-fille, f.
— mother, grand-mère, f.
— son, petit-fils, m.
grant o. a., s'accorder.
grapes, raisins, m. p.
greedy, avide, gourmand.
Greek (s.), Grec, m.
— (adj.), grec, m.
grief, chagrin, m.
grieved, chagriné.
grind (tooth), moulin.
— (sharp), écharpe.
grow, croître, pousser.
guess, to, deviner.
guilty, coupable.

H.

Hackneyed, routinier, banal.
hair, cheveux, m. p.
handkerchief, mouchoir de
—, —.
hand over, to, remettre. [f.
handsome, beau, bel, m., belle,
happen, to, arriver (impers.).
happy, heureux.
— (pleasure), content.
hardly ever, rarement.
hasten (hurry), to, se dépêcher
de.
— (eager), s'empêcher
de.
harm, mal, m.
harmonium, harmonium, m.
hat, chapeau, m.
hate, to, haïr.
have, to, avoir.
head-ache, mal à la tête, m.
health, santé, f.
—, be in good, to, se porter
bien.
hear, to, entendre.
— (learn), to, apprendre.
— (mean), to, entendre des
—, —.
— say, to, entendre dire.
heart, cœur, m.
heavy, lourd.
help (verb), to, aider.
help (noun), to, aider.
Henry, Henri.
her (adj.), son, sa, m.

hers (*pr.*), le sien, etc.
 here, ici.
 hereafter, dorénavant, désormais.
 hide from, to, cacher à.
 high, haut, élevé.
 himself, lui-même.
 —, by, seul.
 his (*adj.*), son, sa, ses.
 his (*pr.*), le sien, etc.
 history, histoire, f.
 hold, to, tenir.
 — one's tongue, to, se taire.
 holiday, congé, m.
 holidays, vacances, f. p.
 honour, to, honorer.
 hope, espoir, m.
 home, at, chez soi, etc. [m.
 honest man, honnête homme,
 honey, miel, m.
 honour, honneur, m.
 hope, to, espérer.
 hot, chaud.
 hot-house, serre, f.
 house, maison, f.
 House of Commons, Chambre
 des Communes, f.
 — of Lords, Chambre des
 Lords, f.
 how, comment.
 how much, many, combien.
 how often, combien de fois.
 humble o. s., to, s'humilier.
 hurry, to be in a, être pressé.
 hurt (*of boots*), to, blesser.
 husband (*famil.*), mari, m.
 — (*complim.*), époux, m.

I.

Ice, glace, f.
 idle, paresseux.
 idleness, paresse, f.
 if, si.
 ignorant, ignorant.
 ignorance, ignorance, f.
 ignore, to, ignorer.
 ill, malade.
 ill advised, malavisé.
 illness, maladie, f.
 illtreat, to, maltraiter.
 impose, faire accroire.
 impositions (*tasks*), pensums,
 m. p.
 improve in, se perfectionner à.
 improvement, amélioration, f.
 impute, to, imputer à.
 in, dans, en.
 incessantly, sans cesse.
 inclined to, enclin à.
 incur, to, encourir.
 India, les Indes, f. p.
 indolent, indolent.
 indoors, à la maison.
 indulge o. s. to one's heart's
 content, s'en donner à
 cœur joie.

industrious, diligent.
 industry, industrie, f.
 inexperienced, sans expérience.
 infamous, infâme.
 influence, influence, f.
 inform, to, informer.
 ingenious, ingénieux.
 infringe, to, enfreindre.
 inhabit, habiter.
 inhabitant, habitant, m.
 injure, nuire à.
 inkstand, encrier, m. [m.
 innocent (*s. & adj.*) innocent,
 inquiries, to make, prendre
 des informations.
 inquire, to, s'informer de.
 inscribe, to, dédier à.
 —, in, inscrire.
 insolent, insolent.
 instruct, instruire.
 instruction-book, méthode, f.
 instrument, instrument, m.
 insult, to, insulter.
 —, insulte, f. ; affront, m.
 intelligent, intelligent.
 intend (*destine*), to, destiner.
 intention, intention, f.
 interest, intérêt, m.
 interfere, intervenir dans.
 interpret (*thea.*), rendre.
 interrupt, interrompre.
 intimate, intime.
 introduce (*persons*), présenter.
 — (*into*), introduire.
 invention, invention, f.
 inventor, inventeur, m.
 invest a. o. with, revêtir de.
 — (*finance*), placer.
 investigate, to, faire des
 investigations.
 invoice, facture, f.
 irritate, to, irriter.
 irregular, irrégulier.
 Italian, (*s.*), Italien, m.
 — (*adj.*), italien.
 Italy, Italie, f.

J.

Jam, confitures, f. p.
 jealous, jaloux.
 Jew, Juif.
 join, joindre.
 journey, voyage, m.
 —, on the, en, pendant le
 voyage.
 judge, juge, m.
 judgment, arrêt, jugement, m. ;
 sentence, f.
 just now, tout à l'heure.

K.

Keep, to, tenir.
 — on, to, continuer à.

keep silent, to, se taire.
 keepsake, souvenir, m.
 — keepsake, m.
 Kent, Kent.
 kill, to, tuer.
 kind, anything of the, rien de
 la sorte.
 kindly, chaleureusement.
 —, most, on ne peut mieux.
 kiss, to, embrasser.
 knife, couteau, m.
 know, (*persons*), connaître.
 —, (*things*), savoir.
 —, (*let*), to, faire savoir. [f.
 knowledge, connaissances, p.

L.

Labourer, ouvrier, m.
 lady, dame.
 ladies! (*voc.*), mesdames.
 land, terre, f.
 landscape, paysage, m.
 language, langue, f.
 last, dernier.
 late, tard.
 —, of, récemment.
 —, to be, être en retard.
 Latin, Latin. [de.
 laugh at, se moquer de, rire
 Laura, Laure.
 law, loi, f.
 law-suit, procès, m.
 leak, to, fuir.
 learn, to, apprendre.
 leave, to, laisser.
 — (*depart*), to, quitter,
 *partir.
 left (*adj.*), gauche.
 leg (*persons*), jambe, f.
 — (*animals*), patte, f. [f.
 — (*hind*), patte de derrière.
 legal proceedings, to take,
 intenter un procès.
 lend, to, prêter.
 lenient, indulgent.
 less, moins.
 lesson, leçon, f.
 let (*leave*), laisser.
 — (*house*), louer.
 — a. o. know, faire savoir à.
 letter, lettre, f.
 lexicon, lexique, m.
 lie, mensonge, m.
 life, vie, f.
 lightning, éclair, m.
 like, comme.
 — o. a., to, s'entr'aimer.
 likeness, portrait, m.
 line, ligne, f.
 list, liste, f.
 listen, to, écouter.
 little, a, un peu.
 live, vivre, demeurer.
 — (*inhabit*), loger, de-
 meurer.

loaf, pain, m.
 London, Londres, m.
 long *time*, *adv.*, longtemps.
 longing for, to be, désirer
 vivement, avoir bien envie
 de.
 Lords, the, Chambre des
 Lords, f.
 look at, to, regarder.
 — after, to, veiller à.
 — into, to, regarder à.
 lose, perdre.
 — (*one's way*), s'égarer.
 lovely, charmant, aimable

M.

Machine, machine, f.
 madam, madame, f.; mes-
 dames, p.
 Maggie, Marguerite.
 maintain, maintenir.
 majority, plupart, f.
 made, to have, se faire faire.
 make, faire.
 — a fool of, se moquer de.
 — a mistake, se tromper.
 — an apology for, s'excuser
 de.
 — a profit by, profiter de.
 — by, gagner.
 — fun of, se moquer de.
 — haste, se dépêcher.
 — out, venir à bout de.
 — up for, suppléer à. [à.
 — up one's mind, se décider
 — use of, se servir de.
 man, homme, m.
 —, old, vieillard, m.
 manage, to, venir à bout de.
 manner, manière, façon, f.
 many, beaucoup.
 —, a good, beaucoup.
 —, so, autant, tant.
 market, marché, m.
 marry, to, se marier.
 master (*schools*), professeur,
 m. [f. p.
 mathematics, mathématiques,
 matter, chose, affaire, f.
 —? what is the, de quoi
 s'agit-il?
 —, it does not, peu importe.
 mean, to, prétendre.
 means, p., moyen, m. s.
 measure, mesure, f.
 meddle, se mêler de, s'occuper
 de.
 meet, to, rencontrer.
 — (*with an accident*), to,
 *arriver *improvis.*
 — with success, to, avoir.
 — again, to, revoir.
 meeting, réunion, f.
 melon, melon, m.
 memory, mémoire, f.

mention, to, parler de, faire
 mention de, citer (*quote*).
 message (*ordinary*), com-
 mission, f.
 — (*official*), message, m.
 messenger, messager, m.
 midnight, minuit, m.
 mignonette, réséda, m.
 mile, mille, m.
 mimic, contrefaire, singer.
 mind (*to be uneasy*), to, s'in-
 quiéter de.
 mischievous, méchant.
 misfortune, malheur, m.
 misinterpret, to, interpréter
 mal.
 mislay, to, égarer.
 misprint, faute d'impression, f.
 miss, mademoiselle, f.
 miss, to, manquer.
 mistake, erreur, f.
 molest, to, tourmenter.
 Monday, lundi, m.
 money, argent, m.
 monk, moine, m.
 month, mois, m.
 —, in a, per, par mois.
 —, last, le mois passé, or
 dernier.
 — (*last of a period*), le
 dernier mois.
 — (*so much*), a, par mois.
 moon, lune, f.
 more, plus.
 — (*at the end of a sentence*),
 davantage.
 — than, plus de, (*before a*
numeral) plus que.
 morning, matin, m.
 —, every, tous les matins.
 —, the whole, toute la
 matinée.
 morrow, lendemain, m.
 —, to, demain.
 most, the, le plus.
 — (*without comparison*),
 on ne peut plus.
 mother, mère, f.
 move (*mech.*), to, mouvoir.
 — (*tr.*), to, bouger.
 — (*affair*), amouvoir.
 moved, to be, s'émouvoir.
 much, { beaucoup, bien.
 —, very, {
 —, too, trop.
 music, musique, f.

N.

Near, près de.
 —, too, trop près.
 necessary, to be, falloir.
 need, besoin, m.
 needlework, tapisserie, f.;
 ouvrage à l'aiguille, m.
 neglect, négligence, f.

neglect, to, négliger.
 neighbour, voisin, m.
 neither he nor I, ni lui ni moi.
 neither of them, ni l'un ni
 l'autre.
 nephew, neveu, m.
 never, ne-jamais.
 — again, ne-plus jamais.
 — (*no more*), ne-plus.
 news, nouvelle, f.
 next, prochain.
 niece, nièce, f.
 night, nuit, f.
 — (*evening*), soir, m.
 —, at, le soir, la nuit.
 —, in the, pendant la nuit.
 —, last, hier au soir, la
 nuit dernière.
 —, on that, ce soir-là.
 —, to, ce soir.
 no, non.
 nobody, ne-personne.
 no longer, ne plus.
 — more, ne-plus.
 — one, ne-aucun. [nul.
 — whatever, ne-aucun,
 — where, ne-nulle part.
 nonsense, absurdités, f. p.
 —, to talk, déraisonner.
 Norman, Norman.
 nosegay, bouquet, m.
 not, ne-pas, ne-point.
 — any more, ne-plus.
 — where, ne-nulle part.
 — at all, ne-point du tout.
 — one, ne-aucun, ne plus.
 note, billet, m.
 nothing, rien.
 novel, roman, m.
 now, à présent, maintenant.

O.

Oarsman, rameur, m.
 obedient, obéissant.
 obey, obéir.
 objection, objection, f.
 oblige, to, obliger.
 obliging, obligeant.
 obstinate, opiniâtre.
 obtain, obtenir.
 obvious, évident.
 occurrence, incident, m.
 o'clock, heure, heures, f.
 offend, offenser. [de.
 offended, to be, se formaliser
 offer, offrir.
 often, souvent.
 old (*fast*), vieux, vieil, vieille.
 — (*comparison*), âgé.
 — man, vieillard, m.
 — (*fam.*), mon vieux.
 — people, vieilles gens.
 omit, to, omettre de.
 once, une fois.
 —, at, tout de suite.

on purpose, expressément.

open, ouvrir.

— for o. s., s'ouvrir.

opinion, { opinion, f.
 { avis, m.

opportunity, { occasion, f.
 { chance, f.

oppress, to, opprimer.

or, ou.

orange, orange, f.

orphan, orphelin, m.

other, autre.

others, of, to, from, autrui,
d', à.

over, sur, au-dessus.

—, all, partout.

overcome, to, surmonter.

owe, to, devoir.

own, propre.

P.

Paint, to, peindre.

pair, paire, f.

paling, palissade, f.

paper (*news*), journal, m.

parcel, paquet, m.

parents, parents, m. p.

Paris, Paris, m.

part (*theat.*), rôle, m.

—, with, to, quitter, se
défaire de.

particulars, détails, m. p.

partner (*com.*), associé, m.

— (*dance*), vis-à-vis, m.

party (*pol.*), parti, m.

pass, to, passer.

— by, to, s'écouler.

passenger, passager, m.

passion, passion, f.

past, passé.

— half-past two, deux
heures et demie.

pay, to, payer.

— a visit, to, faire visite...à.

peace, paix, f.

pear, poire, f.

pen, plume, f.

pencil, crayon, m.

— case, porte-crayon, m.

people, gens, m. p. and f.

— (*indef.*), on.

— those, personnes, f. p.

perceive, to, s'apercevoir de.

perfection, perfection, f.

perilous, périlleux.

periodical, publication, f.

permit, to, permettre.

persecution, persécution, f.

person, personne, f.

persuade o. s., to, se persuader.

peruse, parcourir.

pick, to, cueillir.

— up, to, ramasser.

picture, tableau, m.

piece (*music*), morceau, m.

pity, to, plaindre.

place, place, f.

plague, peste, f.

plan, dessein, m.

play, jouer.

— at cards, jouer aux cartes.

— at chess, jouer aux échecs.

— the harp, pincer de la
harpe.

— the guitar, pincer de la
guitare.

— the piano, toucher du
piano.

— the violin, jouer du
violon.

plead, to, plaider.

please, to, plaire à.

pleased, to be, se plaire à.

— charmé, content de. [m.]

plough-boy, jeune laboureur,
plum, prune, f.

p.m., du soir.

poem, poème, m.

poetry (*short*), morceau en
vers, m.

— (*art.*), poésie.

polite, poli.

political, politique.

politics, politique, s. f.

polka, polka, f.

poor, pauvre.

—, the, pauvres, m. p.

port wine, vin d'Oporto, f.

portrait, portrait, m.

position, to be in a, être à
même de.

possible, possible.

post, courrier, m.

postman, facteur, m.

potato, pomme de terre, f.

pound (£ or lb.), livre, f.

power, pouvoir, m.

praise, louange, f.

—, to, louer.

pray, to, prier.

pray! (*interj.*) je vous en
prie.

preacher, prédicateur, m.

predicament, position, f.

prediot, to, prédire.

prepare, to, préparer.

preposterous, déraisonnable.

present (*adj.*), présent.

—, cadeau, m.

presently, tout à l'heure.

presentiment, to have a, pres-
sentir.

preserve (*keep*), to, conserver
—, to, confire.

press, to, presser.

pretend, feindre, dissimuler,
prétendre.

pretty, joli.

prevail over, to, prévaloir de.

price, prix, m.

prisoner, prisonnier, m.

prize, prix, m.

probably, probablement.

procure for o. s., to, se pro-
curer.

produce, to, produire.

profit by, to, profiter de.

profitable, lucratif.

progress, progrès, m.

project, projet, m.

promise, promesse, f.

—, to, promettre à.

promote, to, promouvoir.

property, propriété, f.

proposal, proposition, f.

protract, to, prolonger.

provide for, to, pourvoir à.

—, to, fournir.

province, province, f.

Q.

Quack, charlatan, m.

quantity (*small*), le peu de.

quarrel, différend, m.; que-
relle, f.

quarrelsome, querelleur, euse.

quarter to 4, 4 heures moins
un quart.

— past 6, 6 heures et un
quart.

quartet, quatuor, m.

question, question, f.

— (the — is), il s'agit de.

— to, interroger.

quintett, quintette, m.

quite, tout à fait, bien.

quotation, citation, f.

R.

Rain, to, pleuvoir.

rank, rang, m.

rash, téméraire, irréfléchi.

raspberries, framboises, f.

rational, raisonnable.

reach, to, atteindre à, parvenir
à, arriver à.

read, to, lire.

— again, to, relire.

reading, lecture, f.

reason, raison, f.

rebuff, échec, m.

— meet with a, recevoir un
échec.

rebuke, to, réprimander.

receive, to, recevoir.

— (*welcome*), accueillir.

recite, to, déclamer, réciter.

reckon, to, compter.

recognize, to, reconnaître.

recollect, to, se ressouvenir de.

recommend, to, recommander.

reduce, to, réduire.

reflect, to, réfléchir à.

refugee, réfugié, m.

refuse, to, refuser de.

region, région, f.
 regret, to, regretter.
 regulations, règlement, m. s.
 rehearse, to, répéter.
 reject, to, rejeter.
 relate, to, raconter.
 release, mise en liberté, f.;
 libération, f.
 rely upon, to, compter sur.
 relieve, to, soulager.
 remain to, *rester.
 remark, observation, f.
 remedy, remède, m.
 remember, to, se souvenir de,
 se rappeler de.
 render an account to o. o., se
 rendre compte.
 renew, to, renouveler.
 repair (go), to, se rendre.
 repent, to, se repentir de.
 reply, to, répondre à.
 represent, to, représenter. [de.
 reproach, with, to, reprocher
 request, demande, f.
 — to, prier. [de.
 require, to, exiger, avoir besoin
 resent, to, se venger de.
 reserve for o. s., to, se réserver.
 resign (a post), se démettre de,
 donner sa démission.
 — o. s. to, to, se résigner à.
 resolve, to, se résoudre à.
 respect, in every, sous tous les
 rapports.
 resources, ressources, f. p.
 restore, to, restituer.
 result, résultat, m.
 retire, to, se retirer.
 return, retour, m.
 — from, to, *revenir de.
 — to o. a., se rendre.
 review, revue, f.
 reward, récompense, f.
 — to, récompenser.
 rich, riche.
 riches, richesses, f. p.
 ride, to, monter à cheval.
 right, droit, adj. and m. s.
 — to be in the, avoir raison.
 ring (ornamental), bague, f.
 — (use), anneau, m.
 rob, to, voler.
 Robert, Robert. (m.)
 Roman Catholic, Catholique,
 rose, rose, f.
 row, to, ramer.
 rule, règle, f.
 run, to, courir.
 — (liquid), couler.
 — (away), to, s'enfuir.
 — over (in travelling), par-
 courir.
 Russian, Russe.

S.

sad, triste.
 safely, en toute sûreté.
 salary, salaire, m.
 sale, vente, f.
 same, même.
 satisfied, content.
 — with, to be, se contenter
 de.
 satisfy, to, satisfaire, con-
 tenter.
 Saturday, samedi, m.
 save, to, sauver, épargner.
 saving, épargne, f.
 say, to, dire.
 — lessons, to, répéter.
 — over again, to, redire.
 scarcely, à peine, ne ... guère.
 scatter, to, dissiper, répandre.
 school, école, f.
 scold, to, gronder.
 scrape, get out of a, to, se
 tirer d'embarras.
 sea-sickness, mal de mer, m.
 secret, secret, m.
 secure (seats), to, retenir.
 — to, to, s'assurer de.
 see, to, voir.
 — again, to, revoir.
 sea-side, bord de la mer, m.
 seem, to, sembler.
 sell, to, vendre.
 send, to, envoyer.
 — away, to, } renvoyer.
 — back, to, }
 — to o. o., to, s'envoyer.
 senior (Mr.), M— aîné, M—,
 père.
 sentence (gr.), phrase, f.
 — to, condamner.
 servant, domestique, m. f.
 —, (maid), servante, f.
 — (nurse), bonne d'enfants, f.
 serve, to, servir.
 service, service, m.
 settle, to, arranger, régler.
 sew, to, coudre.
 sham, to, feindre.
 sharp (music), dièse, m.
 shelf, rayon, m.
 sherry, vin de Xérès, m.
 shew, to, montrer.
 shilling, schelling, m.
 shine, to, luire.
 shortcomings, insuffisance, f.
 shortly, bientôt, sous peu [17].
 shun, to, fuir.
 shut o. s. up, to, se renfermer.
 shutter, volet, m.
 side, côté, m.
 similar, pareil. (conj.)
 since, (prop.) depuis; car
 sincerely, sincèrement.
 sincerity, sincérité, f.
 sing, to, chanter.
 sink (finance), to, placer.

sir, monsieur, m.
 sister, sœur, f.
 — in-law, belle-sœur, f.
 sit down, to, s'asseoir.
 sitting, séance, f.
 situation, emplacement, m.
 situation, f.
 skate, to, patiner.
 sketch, to, esquisse, f.;
 croquis, m.
 slander, médisance, f.
 — to, médire de.
 slate, ardoise, f.
 sleep, to, dormir.
 slide, to, faire des glissades, f.
 slight, to, traiter sans égard.
 slipper, pantoufle, f.
 small, petit.
 smile, to, sourire à. [à.
 snatch away from, to, arracher
 so as to, afin de, pour. [f.
 society, compagnie, f.; société,
 solar, solaire.
 soldier, soldat, m.
 solve, to, résoudre.
 something, quelque chose, m.
 — — else, autre chose, f.
 son, fils.
 son-in-law, beau-fils, m.
 song, romance, f.; chanson, f.
 soon,
 —, very, } bientôt, [17].
 —, so, sitôt, [17].
 sorry for, fâché de.
 spacious, vaste.
 speak, to, parler.
 — to o. a., to, se parler.
 — one's mind, to, parler
 franchement.
 spell, to, épeler.
 spend (money), to, dépenser.
 — (time), to, passer.
 splendid, somptueux.
 spring (mach.), ressort, m.
 — (season), printemps, m.
 stamps (post), timbres-poste,
 m. p.
 start for, to, partir pour.
 — with, to, tressaillir.
 statement, assertion, alléga-
 tion, f.
 statesman, homme d'état.
 statue, statue, f.
 steal, to, voler.
 steamer, bateau à vapeur.
 steeples, clocher, m.
 step, démarche, f.
 step-son, beau-fils, m.
 still (again), encore.
 — (however), cependant.
 stick, bâton, m.
 stir up (passions), to, ému-
 voir.
 stoop to, to, s'abaisser à.
 stop (remain), to, s'arrêter,
 *rester.
 — a. o., to, arrêter.

story, histoire, f.; conte. m.
 straightforward, équitable.
 strange, étrange.
 Strasburg, Strasbourg.
 straw, paille, f.
 strawberries, fraises, f. p.
 street, rue, f.
 strike (*hour*), to, sonner.
 strong, fort.
 struggle, to, se débattre.
 struck at, to be, être frappé de.
 study, to, étudier.
 style (*Gr.*), style, m.
 — (*kind of*), genre, m.
 subject, sujet, m.
 submit, to, se soumettre à.
 subscribe, s'abonner à, souscrire.
 succeed a. o., to, succéder à.
 — in, to, réussir à, dans.
 success, réussite, f.; succès, m.
 successful, heureux.
 succour, to, secourir.
 such, tel.
 suffer, to, souffrir.
 suffice, to, suffire.
 sufficient, assez.
 sufficiently, assez.
 suggestion, suggestion, f.
 suit (*become*), to, convenir à.
 — o. a., to, se convenir.
 sum (*money*), somme, f.
 — (*arith.*), problème, m.
 sun, soleil, m.
 Sunday, dimanche, m.
 sun-rise, lever du soleil, m.
 sunshade, ombrelle, f. [m].
 superior (*s. & adj.*), supérieur.
 supper, souper, m. [fournir].
 supply, to, faire parvenir.
 support, to, soutenir. [m].
 Supreme Being, Être suprême.
 surely, assurément.
 surprise, to, surprendre.
 surrender, to, se rendre.
 survive, to, survivre à.

T.

Take, prendre.
 — an interest in, to, s'intéresser à.
 — away, prendre à.
 — notice of, to, s'apercevoir de.
 — off, ôter à.
 talk, to, causer, babiller.
 — nonsense, dire des absurdités.
 — (*speak*), to, parler.
 — to o. a., se parler.
 tank, réservoir, m.
 task (*written*), devoir, m.
 teach, enseigner à.
 teacher, professeur, m., institutrice, f.

tears, larmes, f. p.
 tease, to, taquiner.
 teetotaler, buveur d'eau, m.
 telegram, télégramme, m.
 tell, to, dire.
 — o. a., to, se dire.
 — a lie, to, mentir.
 temper (*bad*), colère, f.; emportement, m.
 temperature, température, f.
 terms, conditions, f. p.
 —, to come to, transiger.
 thanks (*inter.*), merci; remerciements, m. p.
 that (*conj.*), que.
 — (*adj.*), ce, cet, cette.
 — (*there*), (*adj.*), ce ... là, cette ... là, etc.
 — thing, cela.
 the, le, la, l', les.
 then, alors, [17] donc.
 there, là, y.
 these (*adj.*), ces.
 — (*here*) (*adj.*), ces ... -ci.
 — (*pr.*), ceux-ci, celles-ci.
 thing, chose, f.
 think of, to, penser à.
 third, tiers, m.
 this (*adj.*), ce, cet, cette.
 — (*here*) (*adj.*), ce ... -ci, cet ... -ci, etc.
 thither, là.
 those (*adj.*), ces.
 those (*there*) (*adj.*), ces ... là.
 threat, menace, f.
 three, trois.
 throw, to, jeter.
 — out, to, rejeter.
 Thursday, jeudi, m.
 thus, ainsi, de la sorte.
 thwart, to, contrecarrer.
 ticket, billet d'entrée, m.
 time, temps, m.; heure, f.
 —, appointed, heure convenue, f.
 —s, at all, de tout temps.
 —, at the same, en même temps.
 — in good, de bonne heure.
 — in that, en si peu de temps.
 —, (*hour*), heure, f.
 —, proper, en temps et lieu.
 times, three, trois fois.
 time, next, la fois prochaine, la prochaine fois.
 —, each, chaque fois.
 —, every, toutes les fois.
 — this, cette fois.
 to, à.
 together, ensemble.
 to-morrow, demain.
 too (*also*), aussi.
 — many, trop, [11].
 — much, trop.
 — soon, trop tôt.
 topic, matière, f.; sujet, m.

touch, to, toucher.
 towards (*feeling*), envers.
 — (*motion*), vers.
 towel, essuie-mains, m.
 town, ville, f.
 toy, joujou, m.
 train, convoi, train, m.
 translate, to, traduire.
 travel, voyager.
 treat, to, traiter.
 trifles, bagatelles, f. p.
 troop, troupe, f.
 trouble, peine, f.
 — (*useless*), tracasserie, f.
 —, to, déranger.
 troublesome, importun, turbulent.
 trust, to, se fier à.
 trustworthy, digne de confiance.
 truth, vérité, f.
 try, to, essayer.
 Tuesday, mardi, m.
 Turkey, Turquie, f.
 turn, to, tourner.
 turn into, to, se résoudre, changer.
 turn round, to, se retourner.
 tutor, précepteur, m.
 twelve o'clock, a.m., midi, m.
 — p.m., minuit, m.
 twice, deux fois.
 two, deux.

U.

ugly, vilain.
 umbrella, parapluie, m.
 unable, to be, ne-pouvoir.
 uncle, oncle, m.
 uncomfortable, mal à son aise.
 uncultivated, inculte.
 understand, to, comprendre.
 undertake, to, entreprendre.
 unexpectedly, à l'improviste.
 unfortunate, infortuné, malheureux.
 unfortunately, malheureusement.
 unhappy, malheureux.
 unjust, injuste.
 until, jusqu'à.
 untoward, fâcheux.
 up to, jusqu'à.
 upon, sur.
 upside down, sens — dessus — dessous.
 use, usage, m.
 —? what is the, à quoi bon?
 use, to, se servir de.
 usual, than, qu'à l'ordinaire.

INDEX.

[NOTE.—All numbers have reference to the Rules, except when pp. are given.]

Adverb, Place of —, 304, 305, 306.—*Y*, 23.—*Y* rendered by *là*, 49.—*Y* to be preceded by the euphonic *s*, 48.—*Y* with the Imperative of a Reflexive verb, 50.

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns.—Accusative Case [Pronouns in the], 14; Dative Case [Pronouns in the] 9, 17, 20, 21, 22.—*En*, its frequent use in French, 24.—*En*, followed by a Participle Past, 25; and Par. No. 6, p. 84.—*En*, its various meanings, 24.—*En*, why not printed entirely in RED, on Par. No. 1, 25.—Influence of Pronouns in the Dative Case over the Participle Past, 9, 12, 13, 16, and Par. No. 6, p. 78.—Influence of Pronouns in the Accusative Case over the Participle Past, 13, 15, 16, and Par. No. 6, p. 78.—*Leur* and *leurs*, both plural, 19.—*Lui*, *leur*, with Reflexive verbs, 54 (iii.).—*Moi*, *toi*, followed by *en*, 51.—Place of *two* or *more* Pronouns in the Dative Case, 11.—Pronouns in the Dative Case, which *precede* those in the Accusative Case, 10, 18.—Which of them *follow* the Accusative Case, 10, 17.—Pronouns *after* a verb in the Imperative, 43, 44, 45, 47, 50.—When they are placed *before* the Imperative 46, 47, 50.—Why the Pronouns in the Accusative Case are printed in RED on Par. No. 1, 14.—Why two columns are assigned to Pronouns in the Dative Case on Par. No. 1, 10.—*Y*, 20, 21, 22.

Disjunctive Personal Pronouns.—Their use, 311, 312.

Negation.—Conjunctions followed by *ne*, 8 (vi.).—Difference between *ne* and *ne...pas* with an Infinitive, 7.—*Né*, without *pas*, 7, 8.—Placed before the Participle Past, 4 (i.).—Which negations *follow* the Participle Past, 4 (ii.), 6, and which *precede* it, 4 (i.) 5.—Which verbs require *ne* in the subordinate clause, 8 (ii. iii. iv. v.).

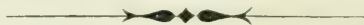
Paradigms.—No. 1. On the place of the words in the sentence.—No. 2. On the difference between all the Moods and Tenses of the English and of the French verb [Active Voice], p. 14.—No. 3. On the same [Passive Voice], p. 24.—No. 4. On the relation between the Primary and Secondary Tenses of the English Verb and those of the French Subjunctive Mood, p. 54.—No. 5. On the Sequence of Tenses, p. 58.—No. 6. On the agreement of the Participle Past, p. 78.

Participle Past.—Par. No. 6 on the agreement of the —, pp. 78–85. Variable, 13, 14, 15, 16, 25, 55, 57, 58, 307, pp. 78, 80, 82, 84.—Invariable, 10, 12, 16, 56, 308, pp. 79, 81, 83, 85.

Subject, Place of the —, 1, 2, 3.—Two columns assigned to it in Par. No. 1, and 3.

Verb.—Compound Tenses with *to have* and *être*, 52, 53.—English Future, 35.—English Future Perfect, 35.—English Progressive Form, 29.—Four

forms of the English Past Tense, 28.—Frequent use of Compound Tenses, 27.—Future, 34.—Hypothetical Tense, 40–41.—IDIOMATIC TENSES, 59 [*Active Voice*], pp. 14–24. [*Passive Voice*], pp. 24–37. Imperative Mood (*affirmative*), 43, 44, 45, 47, 48–51.—[*Negative*], 46.—IRREGULAR VERBS, 60, pp. 38–51. *J'aurais* and *j'eusse* (difference), 36–38.—Past Definite, 30, 31, 33.—Past indefinite, 32.—A favourite Tense in French, 28.—Present of the Conditional, two forms in Compound Tenses 36, and 39, 40, 42. Primary and Secondary Tenses of the English Verb [*Active Voice*], translated pp. 14–24.—Those in the *Passive Voice*, pp. 24–37.—Reflexive Verbs and the place of Pronouns, 54. Reflexive Verbs with a Pronoun in the Dative, 12, 16, 56;—with Pronouns in the Dative and in the Accusative 13, 16, 57.—With Pronouns in the Accusative, 15, 55.—Repetition of Verbs, 61.—SEMI-IRREGULAR VERBS, 61.—Verbs in *ayer*, *eyer*, *oyer*, *uyer*, 61 (*c*).—Verbs in *cer* 61 (*e*).—Verbs in *cevoir*, 61 (*f*).—Verbs in *cler*, *eter*, 61 (*a*, *b*).—Verbs in *ger*, 61 (*d*).—SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD, 62, 63, and Par. No. 4, on the use of —, p. 54.—Par. No. 5. On the Sequence of Tenses, p. 58.—Verbs which govern this Mood, 66–240.—Particles and Conjunctival expressions, 241–266.—*Que* used instead of Particles, 267–277.—Relative and Personal Pronouns and Adverbs, 278–299.—Exclamations, 300–303.—INFINITIVE MOOD, 309, 310.—Prepositions (if any) to be used before verbs in this mood, p. 86–88.



DEGREE OF DIFFICULTY OF THE EXERCISES.

EASY. —On the Negation, Conjunctive Personal Pronoun,						
Auxiliary, Regular, and a few Irregular Verbs	...	...	...	...	...	Ex. 1—83
On Adverbs	...	...	...	...	...	, 118–119
On the Participle Past. [All those Exercises bearing on Col. 13 included in the above Exercises 1—83.]						
MODERATE. —On Regular, Semi-irregular, and Irregular						
Verbs	...	...	...	...	...	, 84—96
On the Participle Past	...	...	...	...	...	, 120–124
On the Disjunctive Personal Pronouns	...	...	...	...	...	, 135–136
Dictation and Translation of Exercises on Inversion	...	...	...	...	...	, 137–148
On Easy Composition	...	...	...	...	...	, 157–200
DIFFICULT. —On the Subjunctive Mood						
On the Participle Past	...	...	...	...	...	, 97–117
On the Infinitive Mood	...	...	...	...	...	, 125–128
On Inversion	...	...	...	...	...	, 129–134
On the Idiomatic Tenses of the Verb	...	...	...	...	...	, 137–148
	...	...	...	...	...	, 149–156

EXPLANATION OF PARADIGM No. 1.

THIS Paradigm exhibits the place of the principal words, both in the Principal and in the Subordinate clause of the French sentence. It shews, at a glance, when the Participle past must agree, and needs but a few days' practice for its complete mastery. Although separate Rules, accompanied by Examples and Exercises, bearing chiefly on the various columns, will be found hereafter, Beginners are recommended :

1st. To translate, *at first* literally into French, every word contained in the English sentence, with the exception of the auxiliary forms *do, did, was —ing, were, —ing, shall, will, should, would, may, might*, taking care to place under each word, the number of the column in which it is found, when the correct arrangement will at once become apparent. Thus :

I have not spoken to him.

[Je ai ne pas parlé lui.]

We should not have asked it.

[Nous + ne pas aurions demandé le.]

Je ne lui ai pas parlé.

1 2 5 8 10 13

Nous ne l'aurions pas demandé.

1 2 4 8 10 13

2nd. To ascertain whether, in the formation of its Compound Tenses, the French verb requires *avoir* or *être*, and especially the case it governs :

They have not gone away yet.

We have asked it of him.

Il ne sont pas encore partis.

Nous le lui avons demandé.

3rd. To bear in mind that the French present perfect or past indefinite [*j'ai écrit*] is very often used to render the English past tense [*I wrote*] :

His sisters wrote all those letters.

They went nowhere together.

Ses sœurs ont écrit toutes ces lettres.

Ils ne sont allés nulle part ensemble.

4th. To remember that the *participle past* of a passive verb always agrees with the subject of the verb *être*, and that when it is used as a *qualificative*, it invariably agrees with the substantive to which it relates :

These people were by no means esteemed.

Well selected books.

Offers rejected.

Ces gens-là n'étaient nullement estimés.

Des livres bien choisis.

Des offres refusées.

5th. To observe, in order that no mistakes may be made in applying the rules on the agreement of the *participle past*, that all the pronouns in the accusative [direct objective] case, set forth in column 4, together with the terminations of the participle in column 13, are printed in *red type*, for the purpose of reminding the pupil, that the participle past, conjugated by means of the auxiliary *avoir*, agrees with the pronoun in the accusative *only*, provided the latter *precedes* the verb :

We should have given them [m.p.] to her.

You have introduced them [f.p.] to us.

Nous LES lui aurions donnés.

Vous nous LES avez présentés.

6th. To recollect :

(i.) That the *participle past* of a reflexive verb [and as such always conjugated with *être*] agrees only when preceded by a pronoun in the accusative case in column 4, but remains invariable when it is preceded by a pronoun in the dative [indirect objective] case in column 3 :

They enjoyed themselves pretty well.

I 8 13 4 II II

They wrote these letters to each other.

I 8 13 3

They have written them to each other.

I 8 13 4 3

Elles SE [accusative] sont assez bien

I 4 8 II II
amusées.

Elles se [dative] sont écrit ces lettres.

I 3 8 13

Elles se [dative] LES [accusative] sont

I 3 4

écrites.

(ii.) That in addition to the agreement of the participle past with the pronouns in the accusative case, the relative pronoun *que* also requires the participle past to agree in gender and number with its *antecedent* :

The letters which we wrote.

Les lettres QUE nous avons écrites.

The letters which we wrote to each other.

Les lettres QUE nous nous sommes
écrites.

(iii.) That the pronoun *en*, [column 7] exercises but a partial influence over the inflexion of the participle past.

REMARKS.

I. In those Exercises which require the verb to be used *interrogatively*, the pronouns in the nominative case will be found to be printed *immediately after the verb* [1], which in *questions* and a few exceptional instances, is their proper place. They are, as such, to occupy the place of the *blank column immediately after the verb* :

Did you not tell him so?

[Have you not told it to him?]

8 [1] 2 10 13 4 3

Why did he not mention it to me?

[Why has he not spoken to me about it?]

8 [1] 2 10 13 3 7

Ne le lui avez-vous pas dit?

2 4 5 8 [1] 10 13

Pourquoi ne m'en a-t-il pas parlé?

2 3 7 8 [1] 10 13

II. Among the various columns assigned to adverbs, some of them are printed in *italics*, to shew that their place in the sentence is by no means fixed, and frequently varies. Those which are *formed from adjectives*, are usually placed in columns 15 and 17, although a few precede the negative and occupy column 9. These will be accompanied by the figure 9 in the Vocabulary or in the Exercises.

III. The place of pronouns with verbs in the Imperative, is fully explained in Rules 43-51.

IV. Verbs in the Infinitive mood are placed in column 16.

V. Disjunctive Personal Pronouns occupy columns 18, 19, 20, 21.

V.

Valuable, précieux ; (to be...), avoir de la valeur.
vanity, vanité, f.
variance, at, mal ensemble (*intr.*).
various, divers.
vase, vase, m.
venture, to, oser.
verb, verbe, m.
verse, vers, m.
very, très, fort, bien.
vexed, affligé, contrarié.
victorious, victorieux.
victory, victoire, f.
village, village, m.
viper, vipère, f.
virtue, vertu, f.
visit, visite, f.
visitor, visiteur, m.
volunteer, volontaire, m.
voter, électeur, m.
voyage, voyage, m.

W.

Wait, to, attendre.
walk, promenade, f.
walk, to, se promener, marcher.
walking-stick, canne, f.
waltz, valse, f.
want (*desire*), to, désirer, vouloir.
 — (*need*), to, avoir besoin de, vouloir de.
wanting, to be, manquer (*impers.*).
wants, besoins, m. p.
warm, it is, chaud (il fait).
 — (*affection*), inviolable.
warn, avertir.
war-news, nouvelles de la guerre, f. p.
wash (*clean*), to, nettoyer.

wash o. s., to, se laver.
watch, montre, f.
 —, to, surveiller.
water, eau, f.
 —, —colours, aquarelle, f.
way, chemin, m.
wealth (s.), richesses, f. p.
wear, to, porter.
weather, temps, m.
 —, it is fine, il fait beau temps.
 —, it is bad, il fait mauvais temps.
 —, hot, grandes chaleurs, f.
Wednesday, mercredi, m.
week, semaine, f. ; huit jours, m.
 —, a — ago, il y a 8 jours.
 —, last, la semaine dernière.
 —, the last, (*of a period*), la dernière semaine.
 —, next, la semaine prochaine.
weigh, to, peser.
welcome, to, accueillir.
well, bien [15].
what ! (*excl.*) quoi !
what (*which* ? *adj.*), quel, quelle, quels, quelles.
what ! (*thing*) que.
wheelbarrow, brouette, f.
where ? où ?
whip, fouet, m.
whole, tout.
why, pourquoi.
wide, large.
wife (*famil.*), femme, f.
 — (*compl.*), épouse, f.
will, to, vouloir.
willing, to be, vouloir.
win, to, gagner.
wine, vin, m.
winter, hiver, m.
wise, sage.
wish, to, désirer, souhaiter, vouloir.
 — for, to, désirer.

with, avec.
withdraw, to, retirer.
 — o. s., to, se retirer.
withhold, retenir.
without, sans.
witness, témoin, m.
woman, femme, f.
 —, old, vieille, f.
wood, bois, m. ; forêt, f.
word, mot, m. ; parole, f.
work, ouvrage, m. ; travail, m.
 —, to, travailler.
 — box, boîte à ouvrage, f.
world, monde, m.
worry, to, tracasser.
worth, to be, valoir.
wrath, courroux, m.
wrecked, to be, faire naufrage.
wretchedly (*followed by an adj.*), archi—(*mauvais*).
write, to, écrire.
 — o. a., to, s'écrire.
 — again, to, récrire.
 — out, to, transcrire.
writing (*art*), calligraphie, f.
 — (*ordin.*), écriture, f.
wrong, to be, avoir tort.
wrongfully, injustement.

Y

Year, an, m. ; année, f.
 — (a — ago), il y a un an.
yesterday, hier.
yet, encore, cependant [9].
yield, céder.
young, jeune.
 — lady, demoiselle, f.
 — man, jeune homme, m.
 — men, jeunes gens, m. p.
youngest, cadet—te.
yourself, vous-même, m. & f.
yourselves, vous-mêmes.

ERRATA.

Page 11. Rule 36, time should be tense.

Pages 23 and 27. Par. No. 3. On m'a invité should be On m'a invité.

APPROVED EDUCATIONAL WORKS.

RELFE BROTHERS'

MODEL READING-BOOKS,

No. III. 1s.; IV. 1s. 6d.; V. 2s.; VI. 2s. 6d.

"A Series which, both in external aspect and internal worth, rises far above the ordinary level of such works: it ought to be extensively used in schools and families of the higher class."—*The Athenæum*.

"These books answer honestly to their title—they are Model Reading Books."—*The Nonconformist*.

A Manual of the Elements of Vocal Music.

BY F. LESLIE JONES. 1s.

"A very excellent and practical little treatise: can be heartily recommended."—*The Academy*.

"Mr. Jones is entitled to the thanks of all Teachers: we warmly recommend the Manual to all." *Civil Service Review*.

Ashby's Choice Poems and Lyrics. 1s.

"A delightful selection, most admirably done . . . it should be in the hands of every one who can read."

The Metropolitan.

"Admirably adapted for its purpose."—*Broad Arrow*.

"Refreshing to meet with a book which has so completely abandoned the track usually followed, and we heartily wish it a long and useful career."—*Scholastic World*.

Price One Shilling.

FIRST PRINCIPLES

OF

MODERN HISTORY:

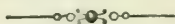
1815-1879.

(FROM THE ENGLISH POINT OF VIEW.)

By T. S. TAYLOR,

*Author of First Principles of English, French, and
Roman History, etc.*

In which all Unnecessary Statistics and Unimportant
Details are Omitted.



This work is the result of an effort to place before children, in plain and simple language, an account of the wonderful progress made by this country since the year 1815; to show the steps by which Great Britain has advanced from a small European Kingdom to the foremost position amongst the great Empires of the World.

It is intended to be the sequel to the Author's *First Principles of English History*; but, while dealing chiefly with British history, it will be found to embrace an account of almost every important event which has happened in the World during the period of which it treats.

The great events of the present day—the Russo-Turkish War, the Berlin Congress, the Afghan and Zulu Wars, and the Egyptian difficulty, have been treated at somewhat greater length, and it is thought may interest some who are no longer children. At the same time, our Social progress has not been lost sight of, and an account is given of those great inventions and discoveries which have done so much for our advancement.

The Events of the present day are shown to rest upon, and to have grown out of, those of past centuries; and the book will be found to contain a large mass of useful information not to be found in our usual School histories.

The Author has tried to impress on the youthful mind something of the grandeur of the British Empire, and of the harmonious nature of our system of government. He has sought to point out some of the lessons taught by the history of this period, and to help the student to deduce others for himself.

LONDON: RELFE, BROTHERS, ALDERSGATE.

CHOICE POEMS AND LYRICS

FOR STUDY AND DELIGHT.

(CHIEFLY DESIGNED FOR USE IN COLLEGES
AND SCHOOLS.)

EDITED, WITH NOTES AND A PREFACE,

BY

J. T. ASHBY.

This is a compilation from the choicest poetical gems in the English language, and contains selections, many of which are new to School literature, from the works of nearly ninety British and American authors. It is mainly intended to be used as a Repetition-book, and is sent forth in the hope that it may help to foster and encourage in the young the love of poetry *for its own sake*, and a desire for further acquaintance with those Masters of Song, to whom it will be found an introduction.

A higher standard of literary excellence has been aimed at than is usual in works of this kind. Nothing has been admitted whose intrinsic value is not great enough to make it worth the labour of getting by heart; and likely, as well as deserving, to be kept in remembrance.

Such biographical notices have been added as may serve to create, or to gratify, an interest in the authors of the hundred and fifty poems here collected. Explanatory Notes, in character with the design of the work *as a Poetry-book*, are given where necessary. And that arrangement of Notes and Text has been adopted which involves least difficulty and loss of time in reference, and also preserves to each page some individuality of appearance, a quality acknowledged to be one of the **most** valuable of incidental aids to memory.

LONDON: RELFE BROTHERS, ALDERSGATE, E C

APPROVED EDUCATIONAL WORKS.

"THE FIRST PRINCIPLES SERIES"

In which all Unnecessary Statistics and Unimportant
Details are omitted. By T. S. TAYLOR.

PRICE ONE SHILLING EACH.

ENGLISH HISTORY:

"The principle on which it is based is good."

Saturday Review.

"A decided success."—*Church Review.*

"An excellent little work."—*City Press.*

"Mr. Taylor's method of teaching History is the right
one."—*Naval and Military Gazette.*

FRENCH HISTORY:

"Quite the best which has yet come under our notice."

Saturday Review.

ROMAN HISTORY:

"In all ways a desideratum."—*Brief.*

"Of great service."—*The Tablet.*

"We know no better introduction."—*Broad Arrow.*

"Knowledge made easy in deed and truth."

Metropolitan.

ENGLISH GRAMMAR:

"An admirable little book."—*Saturday Review.*

MODERN HISTORY:

"This useful little book will, we hope, be largely used."

Athenæum.

"An exceedingly useful book."—*The Tablet.*

"It should be read by all."—*Metropolitan.*

"We can imagine no better introduction."

Broad Arrow.

EUCLID (price 1s. 6d.):

"An excellent little Work. . . . Boys who are allowed
to learn Euclid after Mr. Taylor's fashion will be a
great deal better off than their predecessors."

Saturday Review.



LaF. Gr.

M415g

3564

Author Masse, J. F. P.

Title A grammar of colloquial French.

NAME OF BORROWER.

DATE

University of Toronto
Library

DO NOT
REMOVE
THE
CARD
FROM
THIS
POCKET

Acme Library Card Pocket
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File"
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU



UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C
39 12 04 04 13 011 5